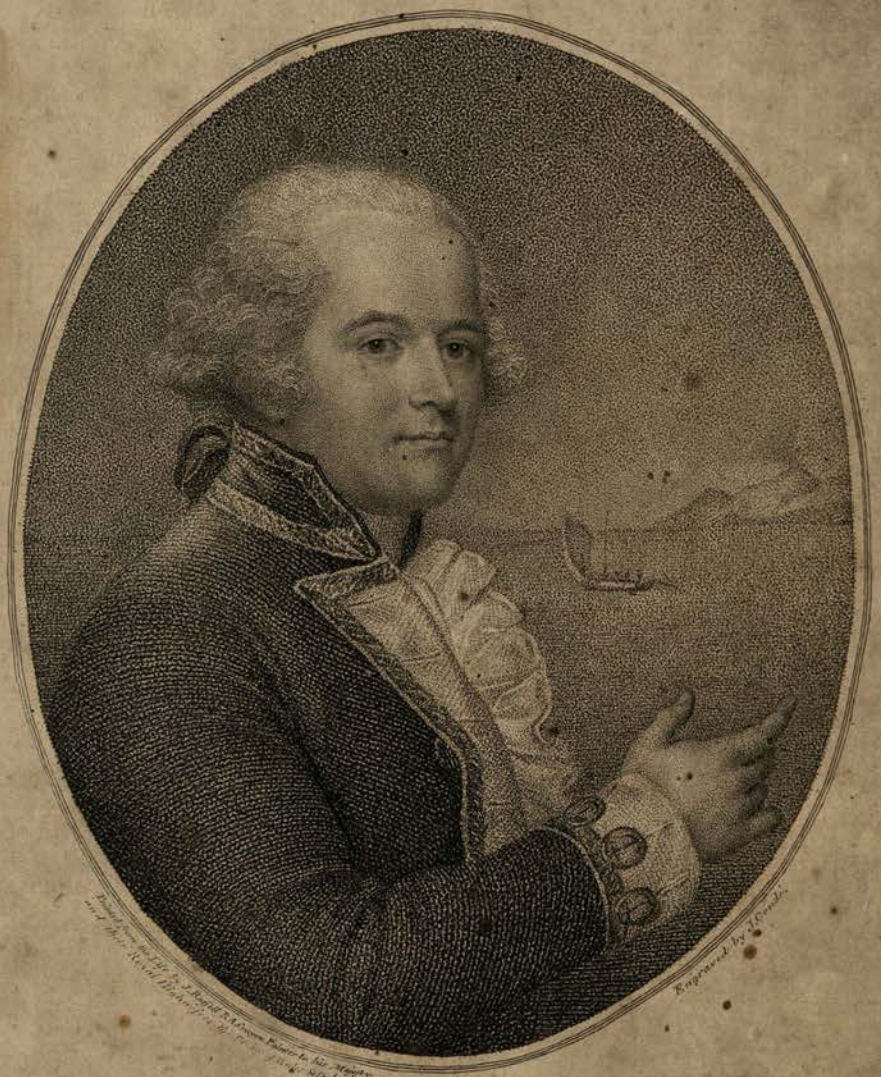
00085579

NOT TO BE ISSUED
OUT OF THE LIBRARY.

BOMBAY BRANCH
OF THE
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY
TOWN HALL, BOMBAY.

Digitized with financial assistance from
Observer Research Foundation
on 01 June, 2019

00085579



CAPT. BLIGH.

Literary Society of Bombay — Z. 16-2

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

SOUTH SEA,

UNDERTAKEN BY COMMAND OF

HIS MAJESTY,

FOR THE PURPOSE OF

CONVEYING THE BREAD-FRUIT TREE
TO THE WEST INDIES,

IN HIS MAJESTY's SHIP THE BOUNTY,

COMMANDED BY

LIEUTENANT *WILLIAM BLIGH.*

INCLUDING AN ACCOUNT OF THE

MUTINY ON BOARD THE SAID SHIP,

AND THE

SUBSEQUENT VOYAGE of Part of the CREW, in the SHIP's BOAT,

From TOFOA, one of the FRIENDLY ISLANDS,

To TIMOR, a DUTCH SETTLEMENT in the East Indies.

THE WHOLE ILLUSTRATED WITH CHARTS, &c.

85579 ac

PUBLISHED BY PERMISSION OF THE

LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF THE ADMIRALTY.

Z. 16-2

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR GEORGE NICOL, BOOKSELLER TO HIS MAJESTY, PALL-MALL.

M.DCC.XCII.

910.453
BL1 /V01

ADVERTISEMENT.

AT the time I publiſhed the Narrative of the Mutiny on Board the Bounty, it was my intention that the preceding part of the Voyage ſhould be contained in a ſeparate account. This method I have ſince been induced to alter. The reaſon of the Narrative appearing firſt, was for the purpoſe of communicating early information concerning an event which had attracted the public notice: and being drawn up in a haſty manner, it required many corrections. Some circumſtances likewiſe were omitted; and the notation of time uſed in the Narrative, being according to ſea reckoning, in which the days begin and end at noon, muſt have produced a degree of obſcurity and confuſion to readers accuſtomed only to the civil mode. And this would have increaſed, as the remainder of the voyage, on account of the numerous ſhore occurrences at Otaheite and elſewhere, could not, with clearneſs and propriety, have been related in any other than the uſual manner of reckoning.

ADVERTISEMENT.

Beſides remedying theſe inconveniencies, I have thought a fuller account of our paſſage from Timor to Europe, than that contained in the Narrative, would not be unacceptable. Theſe reaſons, with the manifeſt convenience of compriſing the whole Voyage in one continued narrative, in preference to letting it appear in disjointed accounts, will, it is hoped, be allowed a ſufficient excuſe for having varied from the original intention. Nevertheleſs, for the accommodation of the purchaſers of the Narrative already publiſhed, thoſe who deſire it, will be ſupplied with the other parts of the Voyage ſeparate; *i. e.* the part previous to the mutiny, and the additional account after leaving Timor.

CONTENTS.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

PLAN of the Expedition.—Outfit, and Occurrences to the Time of leaving England.—Deſcription of the Bread-Fruit - - - - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

Departure from England.—Arrival at Teneriffe.—Sail from thence.—Arrival off Cape Horn.—Severity of the Weather.—Obliged to bear away for the Cape of Good Hope - 14

CHAP. III.

Paſſage towards the Cape of Good Hope, and Search after Triſtan da Cunha.—Arrival at Falſe Bay.—Occurrences there.—Reports concerning the Groſvenor's People.—Departure from the Cape - - - 35

CONTENTS

CHAP. IV.

Paſſage towards Van Diemen's Land.—Make the Iſland of St. Paul.—Arrival in Adventure Bay.—Natives ſeen.—Sail from Van Diemen's Land - - Page 42

CHAP. V.

Rocky Iſlands diſcovered.—See the Iſland Maitea, and arrive at Otaheite.—Ship crouded by the Natives - - 55

CHAP. VI.

Account of an Engliſh Ship lately ſailed from Otaheite.—Death of Omai.—Captain Cook's Picture ſent on board.—Otoo viſits the Ship.—His Viſit returned.—Natives well diſpoſed towards us.—Account of the Cattle left by Captain Cook.—Bread-fruit plants promiſed.—Viſit to the Earee Rahie.—Preſents made to the Arreoys. - - 61

CHAP. VII.

A Theft committed.—Deception of the painted Head.—Converſation with a Prieſt.—A Wreſtling Match.—Reports of the Natives concerning other Iſlands.—Some Account of Omai. - - - - - 82

CHAP. VIII.

Expedition to Tettaha after a Heifer.—Extraordinary domeſtic Arrangements.—Tinah's Mother viſits the Ship.—A Sheep

A Sheep brought from Ulietea.—Heavy Storm.—Death of the Surgeon.—Taowne and Toahroah Harbours examined. - - - - Page 93

CHAP. IX.

A Walk into the Country.—The Peeah Roah.—Prevailed on, by the Kindneſs of the Chiefs, to defer our Departure.—Bread-fruit Plants collected.—Move the Ship to Toahroah Harbour.—Fiſhing.—Three of the Ship's Company deſert.—Indiſcretion of our People on Shore.—Inſtances of Jealouſy.—Mourning.—Bull brought to Oparre by a Prophet.—The Deſerters recovered.—Tinah propoſes to viſit England. 105

CHAP. X.

The Ship's Cable cut in the Night.—Coolneſs with the Chiefs on that Account.—Viſit to an old Lady.—Diſturbance at a Heiva.—Tinah's Hoſpitality.—A Thief taken, and puniſhed.—Preparations for ſailing. - - 123

CHAP. XI.

Arrival of an Arreoy Woman from Tethuroa.—A Preſent delivered by Tinah for his Majeſty.—Other Occurrences to the Time of the Ship's Departure from Otaheite. - 135

CHAP. XII.

At the Iſland Huaheine.—A Friend of Omai viſits the Ship.—Leave the Society Iſlands.—A Water-ſpout.—The Iſland Whytootackee

Whytootackee diſcovered.—Anchor in Annamooka Road.—Our Parties on Shore robbed by the Natives.—Sail from Annamooka.—The Chiefs detained on board.—Part friendly - - - - Page 143

CHAP. XIII.

A Mutiny in the Ship - - - - 154

CHAP. XIV.

Proceed in the Launch to the Iſland Tofoa.—Difficulty in obtaining Supplies there.—Treacherous Attack of the Natives.—Eſcape to Sea, and bear away for New Holland - - - - - - 165

CHAP. XV.

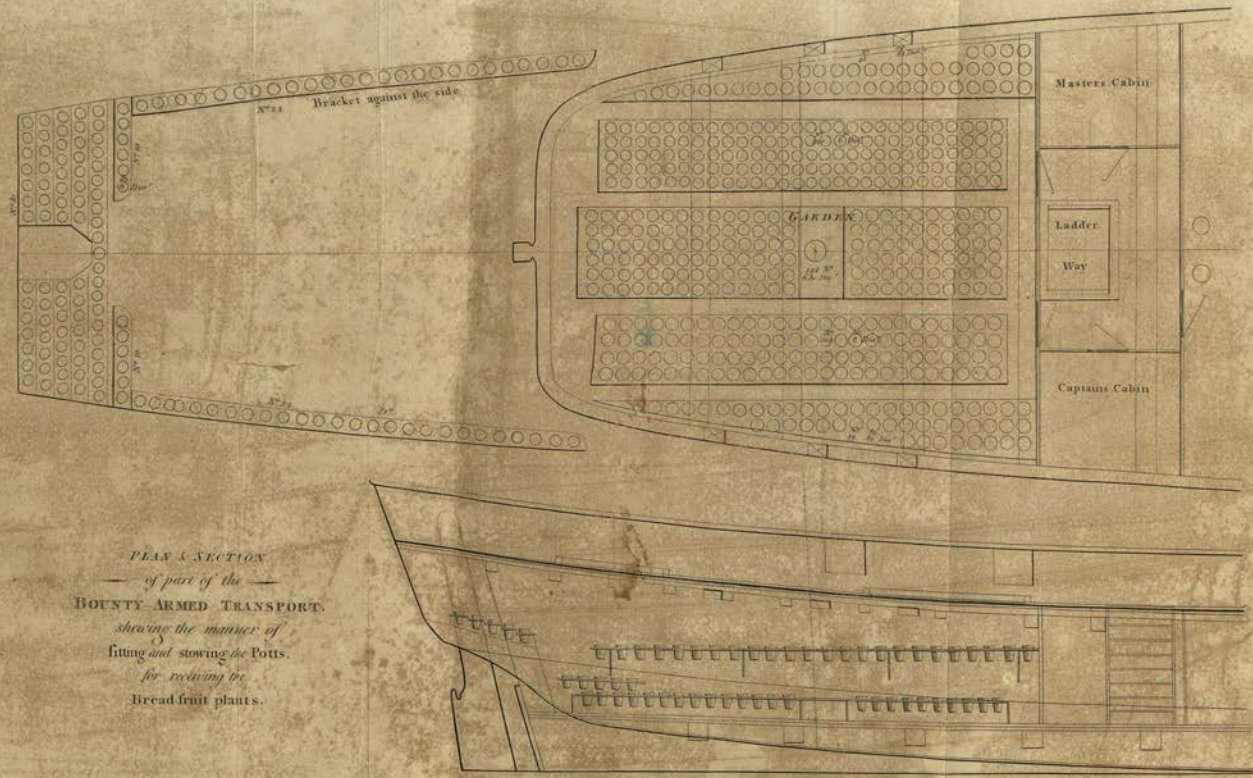
Paſſage towards New Holland.—Iſlands diſcovered in our Route.—Our great Diſtreſſes.—See the Reefs of New Holland, and find a Paſſage through them - - 177

CHAP. XVI.

Progreſs to the Northward, along the Coaſt of New Holland.—Land on different Iſlands, in ſearch of Supplies 200

CHAP. XVII.

Paſſage from New Holland to the Iſland Timor.—Arrive at Coupang.—Reception there - - - 222



PLAN & SECTION
— of part of the —
BOUNTY ARMED TRANSPORT.
shewing the manner of
fitting *and* stowing *the* Potts.
for receiving the
Bread fruit plants.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XVIII.

At Coupang - - - - Page 239

CHAP. XIX.

From Timor to Batavia - - - - - 246

CHAP. XX

Occurrences at Batavia, and Paſſage thence to England - 253

LIST

LIST OF THE PLATES.

Head of Lieutenant BLIGH - - *to front the Title page.*
Plan and profile of the deck of the Bounty - - Page 1
Sections of the Bread-fruit - - - - - 10
Plan of Toahroah harbour - - - - - 104
Copy of the draught from which the Bounty's launch was built 165
Chart of Iſlands diſcovered from the launch - - - 179
Chart of part of the N E coaſt of New Holland - - 220
Chart of the track of the launch from Tofoa to Timor - - 228

A VOY-

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

SOUTH SEAS, &c.

CHAP. I.

Plan of the Expedition.—Outfit, and Occurrences to the Time of leaving England.—Deſcription of the Bread-Fruit.

THE King having been graciouſly pleaſed to comply with a requeſt from the merchants and planters intereſted in his Majeſty's Weſt India poſſeſſions, that the bread-fruit tree might be introduced into thoſe iſlands, a veſſel, proper for the undertaking, was bought, and taken into dock at Deptford, to be provided with the neceſſary fixtures and preparations for executing the object of the voyage. Theſe were completed according to a plan of my much honoured friend, Sir Joſeph Banks, which, in the event, proved the moſt advantageous that could have been adopted for the intended purpoſe. 1787.

The ſhip was named the Bounty: I was appointed to command her on the 16th of Auguſt 1787. Her burthen was nearly two hundred and fifteen tons; her extreme length on deck, ninety feet ten inches; extreme breadth, twenty-four feet three inches; and height in the hold AUGUST. 16.

1787. AUGUST. under the beams, at the main hatchway, ten feet three inches. In the cockpit were the cabins of the ſurgeon, gunner, botaniſt, and clerk, with a ſteward-room and ſtore-rooms. The between decks was divided in the following manner:—the great cabin was appropriated for the preſervation of the plants, and extended as far forward as the after hatchway. It had two large ſky-lights, and on each ſide three ſcuttles for air, and was fitted with a falſe floor cut full of holes to contain the garden-pots, in which the plants were to be brought home. The deck was covered with lead, and at the foremoſt corners of the cabin were fixed pipes to carry off the water that drained from the plants, into tubs placed below to ſave it for future uſe. I had a ſmall cabin on one ſide to ſleep in, adjoining to the great cabin, and a place near the middle of the ſhip to eat in. The bulk-head of this apartment was at the after-part of the main hatchway, and on each ſide of it were the births of the mates and midſhipmen; between theſe births the arm-cheſt was placed. The cabin of the maſter, in which was always kept the key of the arms, was oppoſite to mine. This particular deſcription of the interior parts of the ſhip is rendered neceſſary by the event of the expedition.

The ſhip was maſted according to the proportion of the navy; but, on my application, the maſts were ſhortened, as I thought them too much for her, conſidering the nature of the voyage.

SEPTEMBER. 3. On the 3d of September, the ſhip came out of dock; but the carpenters and joiners remained on board much longer, as they had a great deal of work to finiſh.

The next material alteration made in the fitting out, was, leſſening the quantity of iron and other ballaſt.—

I gave directions that only nineteen tons of iron ſhould be taken on board inſtead of the cuſtomary proportion, which was forty-five tons. The ſtores and proviſions I judged would be fully ſufficient to anſwer the purpoſe of the remainder; for I am of opinion, that many of the miſfortunes which attend ſhips in heavy ſtorms of wind, are occaſioned by too much dead weight in their bottoms. 1787. SEPTEMBER.

The eſtabliſhment of men and officers for the ſhip were as follows:

1 Lieutenant to command
1 Maſter
1 Boatſwain
1 Gunner
1 Carpenter
1 Surgeon
2 Maſter's Mates
2 Midſhipmen
2 Quarter Maſters
1 Quarter Maſter's Mate
1 Boatſwain's Mate
1 Gunner's Mate
1 Carpenter's Mate
1 Carpenter's Crew
1 Sailmaker
1 Armourer
1 Corporal
1 Clerk and Steward
23 Able Seamen

44

Two ſkilful and careful men were appointed, at Sir Joſeph Banks's recommendation, to have the management

1787. SEPTEMBER. of the plants intended to be brought home: the one, David Nelſon, who had been on ſimilar employment in Captain Cook's laſt voyage; the other, William Brown, as an aſſiſtant to him.—With theſe two our whole number amounted to forty-ſix.

It was propoſed, that our route to the Society Iſlands ſhould be round Cape Horn; and the greateſt diſpatch became neceſſary, as the ſeaſon was already far advanced: but the ſhipwrights not being able to complete their work by the time the ſhip was ready in other reſpects, our ſailing OCTOBER. Thurſday 4. was unavoidably retarded. However, by the 4th of October the pilot came on board to take us down the river; on the Tueſday 9. 9th we fell down to Long Reach, where we received our gunner's ſtores, and guns, four four-pounders and ten ſwivels.

The ſhip was ſtored and victualled for eighteen months. In addition to the cuſtomary allowance of proviſions, we were ſupplied with ſour krout, portable ſoup, eſſence of malt, dried malt, and a proportion of barley and wheat in lieu of oatmeal. I was likewiſe furniſhed with a quantity of iron-work and trinkets, to ſerve in our intercourſe with the natives in the South Seas: and from the board of Longitude I received a time-keeper, made by Mr. Kendal.

Monday 15. On the 15th I received orders to proceed to Spithead; but the winds and weather were ſo unfavourable that we NOVEMBER. Sunday 4. did not arrive there till the 4th of November. On the 24th I received from Lord Hood, who commanded at Spithead, my final orders. The wind, which for ſeveral days before had been favourable, was now turned directly Wedneſday 28. againſt us. On the 28th the ſhip's company received two months pay in advance, and on the following morning we worked out to St. Helen's, where we were obliged to anchor.

We

1787. DECEMBER. Sunday 23.

We made different unſucceſsful attempts to get down Channel, but contrary winds and bad weather conſtantly forced us back to St. Helen's, or Spithead, until Sunday the 23d of December, when we ſailed with a fair wind.

During our ſtay at Spithead, the rate of the time-piece was ſeveral times examined by Mr. Bailey's obſervations at the Portſmouth obſervatory. On the 19th of December, the laſt time of its being examined on ſhore, it was 1′ 52″, 5 too faſt for mean time, and then loſing at the rate of 1″, 1 per day; and at this rate I eſtimate its going when we ſailed.

The object of all the former voyages to the South Seas, undertaken by the command of his preſent majeſty, has been the advancement of ſcience, and the increaſe of knowledge. This voyage may be reckoned the firſt, the intention of which has been to derive benefit from thoſe diſtant diſcoveries. For the more fully comprehending the nature and plan of the expedition, and that the reader may be poſſeſſed of every information neceſſary for entering on the following ſheets, I ſhall here lay before him a copy of the inſtructions I received from the admiralty, and likewiſe a ſhort deſcription of the bread-fruit.

By the Commiſſioners for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of Great Britain and Ireland, &c.

WHEREAS the king, upon a repreſentation from the merchants and planters intereſted in his majeſty's Weſt India poſſeſſions, that the introduction of the bread-fruit tree into the iſlands of thoſe ſeas, to conſtitute an article of food, would be of very eſſential benefit to the inhabitants, hath,

1787. DECEMBER. hath, in order to promote the intereſts of ſo reſpectable a body of his ſubjects (eſpecially in an inſtance which promiſes general advantage) thought fit that meaſures ſhould be taken for the procuring ſome of thoſe trees, and conveying them to the ſaid Weſt India iſlands: And whereas the veſſel under your command hath, in conſequence thereof, been ſtored and victualled for that ſervice, and fitted with proper conveniences and neceſſaries for the preſervation of as many of the ſaid trees as, from her ſize, can be taken on board her; and you have been directed to receive on board her the two gardeners named in the margin, who, from their knowledge of trees and plants, have been hired for the purpoſe of ſelecting ſuch as ſhall appear to be of a proper ſpecies and ſize:

David Nelſon, William Brown.

You are, therefore, in purſuance of his majeſty's pleaſure, ſignified to us by Lord Sydney, one of his principal ſecretaries of ſtate, hereby required and directed to put to ſea in the veſſel you command, the firſt favourable opportunity of wind and weather, and proceed with her, as expeditiouſly as poſſible, round Cape Horn, to the Society Iſlands, ſituate in the Southern ocean, in the latitude of about eighteen degrees South, and longitude of about two hundred and ten degrees Eaſt from Greenwich, where, according to the accounts given by the late Capt. Cook, and perſons who accompanied him during his voyages, the bread-fruit tree is to be found in the moſt luxuriant ſtate.

Having arrived at the above-mentioned iſlands, and taken on board as many trees and plants as may be thought neceſſary (the better to enable you to do which, you have already been furniſhed with ſuch articles of merchandize and trinkets as it is ſuppoſed will be wanted to ſatisfy the natives) you are to proceed from thence through

through Endeavour Streights (which ſeparate New Holland from New Guinea) to Prince's Iſland, in the Streights of Sunda, or, if it ſhould happen to be more convenient, to paſs on the eaſtern ſide of Java to ſome port on the north ſide of that iſland, where any bread-fruit trees which may have been injured, or have died, may be replaced by mangoſteens, duriens, jacks, nancas, lanſas, and other fine fruit trees of that quarter, as well as the rice plant which grows upon dry land; all of which ſpecies (or ſuch of them as ſhall be judged moſt eligible) you are to purchaſe on the beſt terms you can from the inhabitants of that iſland, with the ducats with which you have alſo been furniſhed for that purpoſe; taking care, however, if the rice plants above-mentioned cannot be procured at Java, to touch at Prince's Iſland for them, where they are regularly cultivated. 1787. DECEMBER.

From Prince's Iſland, or the Iſland of Java, you are to proceed round the Cape of Good Hope to the Weſt Indies (calling on your way thither at any places which may be thought neceſſary) and depoſit one half of ſuch of the above-mentioned trees and plants as may be then alive at his majeſty's botanical garden at St. Vincent, for the benefit of the Windward Iſlands, and then go on to Jamaica: and, having delivered the remainder to Mr. Eaſt, or ſuch perſon or perſons as may be authorized by the governor and council of that iſland to receive them; refreſhed your people, and received on board ſuch proviſions and ſtores as may be neceſſary for the voyage, make the beſt of your way back to England; repairing to Spithead, and ſending to our ſecretary an account of your arrival and proceedings.

And whereas you will receive herewith a copy of the inſtructions which have been given to the above-mentioned gardeners

1787. DECEMBER. gardeners for their guidance, as well in procuring the ſaid trees and plants, and the management of them after they ſhall be put on board, as for bringing to England a ſmall ſample of each ſpecies, and ſuch others as may be prepared by the ſuperintendant of the botanical garden at St. Vincent's, and by the ſaid Mr. Eaſt, or others, for his majeſty's garden at Kew; you are hereby required and directed to afford, and to give directions to your officers and company to afford, the ſaid gardeners every poſſible aid and aſſiſtance, not only in the collecting of the ſaid trees and plants at the places before-mentioned, but for their preſervation during their conveyance to the places of their deſtination.

Given under our hands the 20th November 1787.

HOWE,
CHAS BRETT,
RD HOPKINS,
J. LEVESON GOWER.

To Lieut. Wm Bligh, commanding his majeſty's armed veſſel the Bounty, at Spithead.

By command of their Lordſhips,
P. STEPHENS.

In the foregoing orders it is to be obſerved, that I was particularly directed to proceed round Cape Horn; but, as the ſeaſon was ſo far advanced, and we were ſo long detained by contrary winds, I made application to the Admiralty for diſcretional orders on that point; to which I received the following anſwer:

By

By the Commiſſioners for executing the office of Lord High Admiral of Great Britain and Ireland, &c. &c.

1787. DECEMBER.

THE ſeaſon of the year being now ſo far advanced as to render it probable, that your arrival, with the veſſel you command, on the ſouthern coaſt of America, will be too late for your paſſing round Cape Horn without much difficulty and hazard; you are, in that caſe, at liberty (notwithſtanding former orders) to proceed in her to Otaheite round the Cape of Good Hope.

Given under our hands the 18th December 1787.

HOWE,
CHAs BRETT,
BAYHAM.

To Lieut. Wm Bligh, commanding his majeſty's armed veſſel Bounty, Spithead.

By command of their Lordſhips,
P. STEPHENS.

THE BREAD-FRUIT is ſo well known and deſcribed, that to attempt a new account of it would be unneceſſary and uſeleſs. However, as it may contribute to the convenience of the reader, I have given the following extracts reſpecting it, with the plate annexed.

Extract from the account of Dampier's Voyage round the world, performed in 1688.

"THE bread-fruit (as we call it) grows on a large tree, as "big and high as our largeſt apple-trees: It hath a ſpread-"ing head, full of branches and dark leaves. The fruit

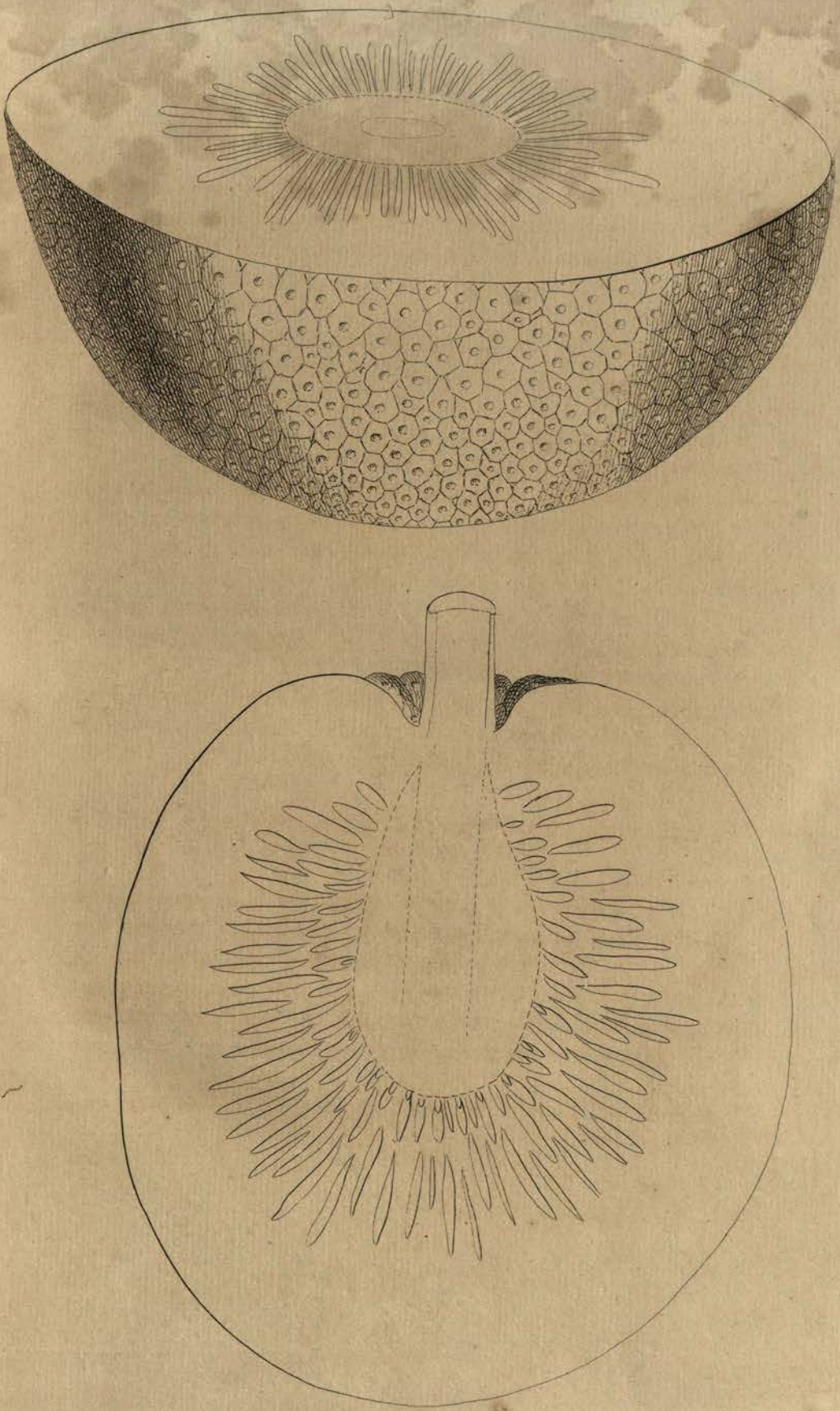
1787. DECEMBER.

"grows on the boughs like apples; it is as big as a penny-"loaf when wheat is at five ſhillings the buſhel; it is of a "round ſhape, and hath a thick tough rind. When the "fruit is ripe, it is yellow and ſoft, and the taſte is ſweet "and pleaſant. The natives of Guam uſe it for bread. "They gather it, when full-grown, while it is green and "hard; then they bake it in an oven, which ſcorcheth the "rind and makes it black; but they ſcrape off the outſide "black cruſt, and there remains a tender thin cruſt; and the "inſide is ſoft, tender, and white like the crumb of a penny-"loaf. There is *neither ſeed nor ſtone* in the inſide, but all "is of a pure ſubſtance, like bread. It muſt be eaten new; "for, if it is kept above twenty-four hours, it grows harſh "and choaky; but it is very pleaſant before it is too ſtale. "This fruit laſts in ſeaſon *eight months* in the year, during "which the natives eat *no other ſort of food of bread kind*. "I did never ſee of this fruit any where but here. The "natives told us, that there is plenty of this fruit growing "on the reſt of the Ladrone iſlands: and I *did never hear "of it any where elſe*." Vol. I. p. 296.

Extract from the account of Lord Anſon's Voyage, publiſhed by Mr. Walter.

"THERE was, at Tinian, a kind of fruit, peculiar to "theſe (Ladrone) iſlands, called by the Indians *rhymay*, but "by us the *bread-fruit*; for it was conſtantly eaten by us, "during our ſtay upon the iſland *, inſtead of bread; and "ſo *univerſally preferred*, that no ſhip's bread was expended "in that whole interval. It grew upon a tree which is

* About two months; viz. from the latter end of Auguſt to the latter end of October, 1742.



Sections of the Bread Fruit.

1787. DECEMBER.

"ſomewhat lofty, and which towards the top divides into "large and ſpreading branches. The leaves of this tree "are of a remarkable deep green, are notched about the "edges, and are generally from a foot to eighteen inches "in length. The fruit itſelf is found indifferently on all "parts of the branches; it is, in ſhape, rather elliptical "than round; it is covered with a tough rind, and is uſu-"ally ſeven or eight inches long; each of them grows "ſingly, and not in cluſters. This fruit is fitteſt to be uſed "when it is full-grown, but ſtill green; in which ſtate, "after it is properly prepared by being roaſted in the em-"bers, its taſte has ſome diſtant reſemblance to that of an "artichoke's bottom, and its texture is not very different, "for it is ſoft and ſpungy."

Extracts from the account of the firſt Voyage of Captain Cook. Hawkeſworth, Vol. II.

IN THE SOCIETY ISLANDS.

"THE bread-fruit grows on a tree that is about the ſize "of a middling oak; its leaves are frequently a foot and a "half long, of an oblong ſhape, deeply ſinuated like thoſe "of the fig-tree, which they reſemble in conſiſtence and "colour, and in the exuding of a white milky juice upon "being broken. The fruit is about the ſize and ſhape of a "child's head, and the ſurface is reticulated not much un-"like a truffle: it is covered with a thin ſkin, and has a "core about as big as the handle of a ſmall knife. The "eatable part lies between the ſkin and the core; it is as "white as ſnow, and ſomewhat of the conſiſtence of new "bread: it muſt be roaſted before it is eaten, being firſt "divided into three or four parts. Its taſte is inſipid, with

1787. DECEMBER.

" a ſlight ſweetneſs ſomewhat reſembling that of the crumb " of wheaten bread mixed with a Jeruſalem artichoke."

P. 80, 81. See alſo the plate there and at p. 232.

" OF the many vegetables that have been mentioned al- " ready as ſerving them for food, the principal is the bread- " fruit, to procure which coſts them no trouble or labour " but climbing a tree. The tree which produces it does not " indeed ſhoot up ſpontaneouſly; but, if a man plants ten " of them in his life-time, which he may do in about an " hour, he will as completely fulfil his duty to his own " and future generations as the native of our leſs temperate " climate can do by ploughing in the cold winter, and " reaping in the ſummer's heat, as often as theſe ſeaſons " return; even if, after he has procured bread for his pre- " ſent houſehold, he ſhould convert a ſurplus into money, " and lay it up for his children.

" It is true, indeed, that the bread-fruit is not always in " ſeaſon; but cocoa-nuts, bananas, plantains, and a great " variety of other fruits, ſupply the deficiency." P. 197.

Extract from the account of Captain Cook's laſt Voyage.

IN THE SOCIETY ISLANDS

" I (Captain Cook) have inquired very carefully into their " manner of cultivating the bread-fruit tree at Otaheite; " but was always anſwered, that they never planted it. " This, indeed, muſt be evident to every one who will exa- " mine the places where the young trees come up. It will " be always obſerved, that they ſpring from the roots of " the old ones, which run along near the ſurface of the " ground. So that the bread-fruit trees may be reckoned

" thoſe

"thoſe that would naturally cover the plains, even ſuppoſ-
"ing that the iſland was not inhabited; in the ſame man-
"ner that the white-barked trees, found at Van Diemen's
"Land, conſtitute the foreſts there. And from this we
"may obſerve, that the inhabitant of Otaheite, inſtead of
"being obliged to plant his bread, will *rather* be under the
"neceſſity of preventing its progreſs; which, I ſuppoſe, is
"ſometimes done, to give room for trees of another ſort, to
"afford him ſome variety in his food." Vol. II. p. 145.

IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS.

"THE bread-fruit trees are planted, and flouriſh with
"great luxuriance, on riſing grounds."—"Where the hills
"riſe almoſt perpendicularly in a great variety of peaked
"forms, their ſteep ſides and the deep chaſms between
"them are covered with trees, amongſt which thoſe of the
"bread-fruit were obſerved particularly to abound." Vol.
III. p. 105 and 114, containing Captain King's Narrative.

"THE climate of the Sandwich Iſlands differs very little
"from that of the Weſt India Iſlands, which lie *in the*
"*ſame latitude*. Upon the whole, perhaps, it may be ra-
"ther more temperate." Captain King, ib. p. 116.

"THE bread-fruit trees thrive in theſe iſlands, not in ſuch
"abundance, but produce double the quantity of fruit they
"do on the rich plains of Otaheite. The trees are nearly of
"the ſame height, but the branches begin to ſtrike out from
"the trunk much lower, and with greater luxuriance."
Capt. King, ib. p. 120.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Departure from England.—Arrival at Teneriffe.—Sail from thence.—Arrival off Cape Horn.—Severity of the Weather.—Obliged to bear away for the Cape of Good Hope.

1787. DECEMBER. ON Sunday morning the 23d of December 1787, we
Sunday 23. ſailed from Spithead, and, paſſing through the Needles, directed our courſe down channel, with a freſh gale of wind at Eaſt. In the afternoon, one of the ſeamen, in furling the main-top-gallant-ſail, fell off the yard, and was ſo fortunate as to ſave himſelf by catching hold of the main-top-maſt-ſtay in his fall. At night the wind increaſed to a ſtrong gale, with a heavy ſea. It moderated, however,
Tueſday 25. on the 25th, and allowed us to keep our Chriſtmas with chearfulneſs; but the following day it blew a ſevere ſtorm of wind from the Eaſtward, which continued till the 29th, in the courſe of which we ſuffered greatly. One ſea broke away the ſpare yards and ſpars out of the ſtarboard main chains. Another heavy ſea broke into the ſhip, and ſtove all the boats. Several caſks of beer, that had been laſhed upon deck, were broke looſe and waſhed overboard, and it was not without great difficulty and riſk that we were able to ſecure the boats from being waſhed away entirely. On the
Saturday 29. 29th we were in latitude 39° 35′ N. and longitude 14° 26′ W. when the gale abated, and the weather became fair. Beſides other miſchief done to us by the ſtorm, a large quantity of our bread was damaged and rendered uſeleſs, for the ſea had

had ſtove in our ſtern, and filled the cabin with water. From this time to our arrival at Teneriffe we had moderate weather, and winds moſtly from the northward. 1787. DECEMBER.

January 4th. This forenoon we ſpoke a French ſhip, bound to the Mauritius. The next day, at nine in the forenoon, we ſaw the iſland of Teneriffe, bearing W S W ½ W, about twelve leagues diſtant. It was covered with a thick haze, except the north-weſternmoſt part, which is a remarkable headland, reſembling a horſe's head, the ears very diſtinct. To the eaſtward of this head * lie two round rocks, the northern boundary of Teneriffe. I had a good obſervation at noon, by which I make the latitude of the two rocks 28° 44′ N, and their longitude by our timekeeper 16° 5′ W. To the ſouthward of theſe, and near the ſhore, is a high needle rock: about four leagues farther to the ſouthward, the coaſt inclines towards the Weſt to the road of Santa Cruz, where we anchored at half paſt nine on Sunday morning, in twenty-five fathoms water, and moored along ſhore in the ſame depth, with the cupola tower of the church of St. Francis bearing W ½ N, one mile, the Eaſt part of the road E by N, the caſtle on the South point S W, and the Weſt part of the Grand Canary S S E. A Spaniſh packet, bound to Corunna, an American brig, and ſeveral other veſſels, were lying here. 1788. JANUARY. Saturday 5. Teneriffe.

As ſoon as the ſhip was anchored, I ſent an officer (Mr. Chriſtian) to wait on the governor, and to acquaint him I had put in to obtain refreſhments, and to repair the damages we had ſuſtained in bad weather. To this I had a very polite anſwer from the governor †, that I ſhould be ſupplied with whatever the iſland afforded. I had alſo directed the officer to acquaint him that I would ſalute,

* S 82° E by the compaſs. † Marquis de Brancheforté.

provided

1788. JANUARY. Teneriffe.

provided an equal number of guns were to be returned; but, as I received an extraordinary anſwer to this part of my meſſage, purporting, that his excellency did not return the ſame number but to perſons equal in rank to himſelf, this ceremony was omitted.

During this interval I was viſited by the port-maſter (Capt. Adams) and ſhortly afterwards ſeveral officers came on board from his excellency, to compliment me on my arrival. As ſoon as the ſhip was moored, I went on ſhore, and paid my reſpects to him.

Monday 7. On Monday morning I began to forward the ſhip's buſineſs with the utmoſt diſpatch, and gave the neceſſary directions to Meſſrs. Collogan and ſons, the contractors, for the ſupplies I wanted. I alſo got leave of the governor for Mr. Nelſon to range the hills, and examine the country in ſearch of plants and natural curioſities.

As there was a great ſurf on the ſhore, I bargained for every thing I wanted, to be brought off by the ſhore boats, and agreed to give five ſhillings per ton for water. Very good wine was bought at ten pounds per pipe, the contract price; but the ſuperior quality was fifteen pounds; and ſome of this was not much inferior to the beſt London Madeira.—I found this was an unfavourable ſeaſon for other refreſhments: Indian corn, potatoes, pumpkins, and onions, were all very ſcarce, and double the price of what they are in ſummer. Beef alſo was difficult to be procured, and exceedingly poor; the price nearly ſix pence farthing per pound. The corn was three current dollars per fanega, which is full five ſhillings per buſhel; and biſcuit at twenty-five ſhillings for the hundred pounds. Poultry was ſo ſcarce that a good fowl coſt three ſhillings. This is, therefore, not a place for ſhips to expect refreſh-

ments

ments at a reaſonable price at this time of the year, wine excepted; but from March to November ſupplies are plentiful, particularly fruit; of which at this time we could procure none, except a few dried figs and ſome bad oranges. 1788. JANUARY.

During our ſtay here, the weather was fair, with N E winds and calms, and ſmall drizzling rain in the night. The thermometer from 66° to 69° at noon in the ſhade. I could make no lunar obſervations for the longitude, but by the help of the time-keeper I have computed the ſituation of the town of Santa Cruz to be 28° 28′ N latitude, and 16° 18′ W longitude. I obſerved the variation by two compaſſes to be 20° 1′ W: this much exceeded what I could have imagined; for, in 1776, I obſerved it only 14° 40′ W; a difference of above five degrees in eleven years: and this makes me reflect on the uncertainty of obtaining the exact deviation of the magnetic pole, and of courſe its annual variation, which never can be accurately aſcertained, unleſs the obſervations are made always in one ſpot, and with the ſame compaſs. Nautical Remarks.

Teneriffe, though conſiderably without the tropic, is ſo nearly within the limits of the trade wind, that navigators generally ſteer to it from the eaſtward. The road of Santa Cruz lies on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, at the end of a range of craggy hills, barren and very lofty; along which you ſail W by S by compaſs into the road, with a ſea unfathomable until near the ſhore. The anchoring ground may be accounted from fifty fathoms to twenty, or even fifteen. The bank is very ſteep, and gives but little time to ſound; for which reaſon it ſhould be done effectually with a heavy lead, or a ſhip will be too near in before a ſtranger is aware of it: he will likewiſe too ſoon expect to find bottom, owing to the great deception of the adjacent high

1788. JANUARY. land. To obviate theſe difficulties, it is neceſſary to obſerve, that while a town, which lies ſome diſtance to the ſouthward of Santa Cruz, is open with the caſtle on the ſouth part of the road, though you may appear near to the ſhore, there is no anchorage; but after it is ſhut entirely in, you get on the bank. The church bearing W, or W by S, and the ſouth point of the road S W ½ S, to S W by W, is a good ſituation for anchoring: the depth about twenty-five fathoms. The diſtance from the ſhore will be three quarters of a mile; and the ſouthernmoſt land that can be ſeen then will be a half or quarter point of the compaſs farther out than the ſouth point of the road.

The bottom is black ſoft mud, with ſome patches of rocks; for which reaſon veſſels, that lie here any length of time, buoy their cables. This precaution, beſides being uſeful in that particular, they think makes them ride more eaſy when there is much ſea ſetting into the road, which, with the wind any way to the ſouthward of eaſt, or at ſouth-weſt, muſt be very conſiderable; it is, therefore, uſual to moor with four anchors, though more than two are ſcarce ever of uſe. Mooring is, however, adviſeable if a ſhip is only to remain twenty-four hours, and the tighter the better, that the cables may keep clear of the ground.

The landing on the beach is generally impracticable with our own boats, at leaſt without great riſk; but there is a very fine pier, on which people may land without difficulty if there is not much ſwell in the road. To this pier the water is conveyed by pipes for the uſe of ſhipping, and for which all merchant-ſhips pay.

There is a degree of wretchedneſs and want among the lower claſs of people, which is not any where ſo common as among the Spaniſh and Portugueſe ſettlements. To alleviate

alleviate theſe evils, the preſent governor of Teneriffe has inſtituted a moſt charitable ſociety, which he takes the trouble to ſuperintend; and by conſiderable contributions, a large airy dwelling, that contains one hundred and twenty poor girls, and as many men and boys, has been built, and endowed with a ſufficiency of land round it, not only for all preſent purpoſes, but for enlarging the building for more objects of charity as their funds increaſe. I had the honour to be ſhown by his excellency this aſylum, (Hoſpicio they call it) where there appeared in every countenance the utmoſt chearfulneſs and content. The decency and neatneſs of the dreſs of the young females, with the order in which they were arranged at their ſpinning-wheels and looms, in an extenſive airy apartment, was admirable. A governeſs inſpected and regulated all their works, which were the manufacturing of ribbons of all colours, coarſe linens, and tapes; all which were managed and brought to perfection by themſelves, from the ſilk and flax in their firſt ſtate; even the dying of the colours is performed by them. Theſe girls are received for five years, at the end of which they are at liberty to marry, and have for their portions their wheel and loom, with a ſum of money proportioned to the ſtate of the fund, which is aſſiſted by the produce of their labour, and at this time was eſtimated at two thouſand dollars per annum. 1788. JANUARY.

The men and boys are not leſs attended to: they are employed in coarſer work, blanketing and all kinds of common woollens: if they become infirm, they ſpend the remainder of their days here comfortably, and under a watchful inſpector, who attends them in the ſame manner as the governeſs does the girls. They are all viſited every day by the governor, and a clergyman attends them every evening. By this humane inſtitution a number of people are rendered

1788. JANUARY. uſeful and induſtrious, in a country where the poor, from the indulgence of the climate, are too apt to prefer a life of inactivity, though attended with wretchedneſs, to obtaining the comforts of life by induſtry and labour.

The number of inhabitants in the iſland, I was informed, were eſtimated at between eighty and one hundred thouſand. Their annual export of wine is twenty thouſand pipes, and of brandy half that quantity. Veſſels are frequently here from St. Euſtatia, and from thence a great quantity of Teneriffe wine is carried to the different parts of the Weſt Indies, under the name of Madeira.

Teneriffe is conſidered of more value than all the other Canaries: the inhabitants, however, in ſcarce ſeaſons receive ſupplies from the Grand Canary; but their vineyards here are ſaid to be greatly ſuperior. Their produce of corn, though exceedingly good, is not ſufficient for their conſumption; and, owing to this, the Americans have an advantageous trade here for their flour and grain, and take wine in return.

The town of Santa Cruz is about half a mile in extent each way, built in a regular manner, and the houſes in general large and airy, but the ſtreets are very ill paved. I am told, that they are ſubject to few diſeaſes; but if any epidemic diſtemper breaks out, it is attended with the moſt fatal conſequences, particularly the ſmall-pox, the bad effects of which they now endeavour to counteract by inoculation. For this reaſon, they are very circumſpect in admitting ſhips to have communication with the ſhore without bills of health.

A ſloop from London, called the Chance, William Meridith, maſter, bound to Barbadoes, out nineteen days from the Downs, came into the road the day before we ſailed. She had ſuffered

ſuffered much by the bad weather; but, having brought no bill of health, the governor would not allow any perſon to come on ſhore, unleſs I could vouch for them, that no epidemic diſeaſe raged in England at the time they ſailed, which I was able to do, it being nearly at the ſame time that I left the land; and by that means they had the governor's permiſſion to receive the ſupplies they wanted, without being obliged to perform quarantine. 1788. JANUARY.

Having finiſhed our buſineſs at Teneriffe, on Thurſday the 10th, we ſailed with the wind at S E, our ſhip's company all in good health and ſpirits. Thurſday 10.

I now divided the people into three watches, and gave the charge of the third watch to Mr. Fletcher Chriſtian, one of the mates.—I have always conſidered this as a deſirable regulation, when circumſtances will admit of it, on many accounts; and am perſuaded that unbroken reſt not only contributes much towards the health of a ſhip's company, but enables them more readily to exert themſelves in caſes of ſudden emergency.

As it was my wiſh to proceed to Otaheite without ſtopping, I ordered every body to be at two thirds allowance of bread: I alſo directed the water for drinking to be filtered through dripſtones that I had bought at Teneriffe for that purpoſe.

In the evening we paſſed the ſouth end of Teneriffe, which is a round lump of land, that, from the lowneſs of the contiguous land, has at a diſtance the appearance of a ſeparate iſland. By our run from the bay of Santa Cruz, I make the latitude of the ſouth end of Teneriffe to be 28° 6′ N.

We ran all night towards the S S W, having the wind at S E. The next morning we could ſee nothing of the land. I now made the ſhip's company acquainted with the intent

of

1788. JANUARY. of the voyage; and, having been permitted to hold out this encouragement to them, I gave aſſurances of the certainty of promotion to every one whoſe endeavours ſhould merit it.

The winds, for ſome days after leaving Teneriffe, were moſtly from the ſouthward. Fiſhing-lines and tackle were diſtributed amongſt the people, and ſome dolphins were caught.

Thurſday 17. On the 17th the wind came round to the N E, and continued ſteady in that quarter till the 25th; on which day, at noon, we were in 3° 54′ N. As the cloudineſs of the ſky gave us reaſon to expect much rain, we prepared the awnings with hoſes for the convenience of ſaving water, in which we were not diſappointed. From this time to our meeting with the S E trade wind we had much wet weather, the air cloſe and ſultry, with calms, and light variable winds, generally from the ſouthward.

Tueſday 29. On the 29th there was ſo heavy a fall of rain that we caught ſeven hundred gallons of water.

Thurſday 31. On the 31ſt, latitude at noon, 2° 5′ N, found a current ſetting to the N E, at the rate of fourteen miles in the twenty-four hours. The thermometer was at 82° in the ſhade, and 81° ½ at the ſurface of the ſea, ſo that the air and the water were within half a degree of the ſame temperature. At eight o'clock in the evening we obſerved a violent ripling in the ſea, about half a mile to the N W of us, which had very much the appearance of breakers. This I imagine to have been occaſioned by a large ſchool (or multitude) of fiſh, as it was exactly in the track the ſhip had paſſed, ſo that if any real ſhoal had been there, we muſt have ſeen it at the cloſe of the evening, when a careful look-out was always kept. However, if it had appeared a-head of us,

inſtead of a-ſtern, I ſhould certainly have tacked to avoid it. To ſuch appearances I attribute the accounts of many ſhoals within the tropics, which cannot be found any where but in maps. Our latitude at this time was 2° 8′ N, and longitude 19° 43′ W. The next day we had more of theſe appearances, from the number of ſchools of fiſh by which the ſhip was ſurrounded. 1788. JANUARY.

Saturday the 2d. This morning, we ſaw a ſail to the N N W, but at too great a diſtance to diſtinguiſh what ſhe was. FEBRUARY. Saturday 2.

Monday the 4th. Had very heavy rain; during which we nearly filled all our empty water caſks. So much wet weather, with the cloſeneſs of the air, covered every thing with mildew. The ſhip was aired below with fires, and frequently ſprinkled with vinegar; and every little interval of dry weather was taken advantage of to open all the hatchways, and clean the ſhip, and to have all the people's wet things waſhed and dried. Monday 4.

With this weather, and light unſteady winds, we advanced but 2½ degrees in twelve days; at the end of which time we were relieved by the S E trade wind, which we fell in with on the 6th at noon, in latitude 1° 21′ N, and longitude 20° 42′ W.

The next afternoon we croſſed the equinoctial line, in longitude 21° 50′ W. The weather became fine, and the S E trade wind was freſh and ſteady, with which we kept a point free from the wind, and got to the ſouthward at a good rate. Thurſday 7.

The weather continuing dry, we put ſome of our bread in caſks, properly prepared for its reception, to preſerve it from vermin: this experiment, we afterwards found, anſwered exceedingly well.

On the 16th, at day-light, we ſaw a ſail to the ſouthward. Saturday 16.

1788. FEBRUARY. ward. The next day we came up with her, and found her to be the Britiſh Queen, Simon Paul, maſter, from London, bound to the Cape of Good Hope, on the whale-fiſhery. She ſailed from Falmouth the 5th of December, eighteen days before I left Spithead. By this ſhip I wrote to England. At ſun-ſet ſhe was almoſt out of ſight a-ſtern.

Monday 18. Monday the 18th. In the courſe of this day's run, the variation changed from weſt to eaſt. According to our obſervations, the true and magnetic meridians coincided in latitude 20° 0′ S, and longitude 31° 15′ W. At noon we were in latitude 20° 44′ S, and longitude 31° 23′ W. In our advances towards the ſouth, the wind had gradually veered round to the eaſt, and was at this time at E N E. The weather, after croſſing the Line, had been fine and clear, but the air ſo ſultry as to occaſion great faintneſs, the quickſilver in the thermometer, in the day-time, ſtanding at between 81 and 83 degrees, and one time at 85 degrees. In our paſſage through the northern tropic, the air was temperate, the ſun having then high ſouth declination and the weather being generally fine till we loſt the N E trade wind; but ſuch a thick haze ſurrounded the horizon, that no object could be ſeen, except at a very ſmall diſtance. The haze commonly cleared away at ſun-ſet, and gathered again at ſun-riſe. Between the N E and S E trade winds, the calms and rains, if of long continuance, are very liable to produce ſickneſs, unleſs great attention is paid to keeping the ſhip clean and wholeſome, by giving all the air poſſible, drying between decks with fires, and drying and airing the people's clothes and bedding. Beſides theſe precautions, we frequently wetted with vinegar; and every evening the pumps were uſed as ventilators. With theſe endeavours to ſecure health, we paſſed the low latitudes without a ſingle complaint.

The

1788. FEBRUARY.

The currents we met with were by no means regular, nor have I ever found them ſo in the middle of the ocean. However, from the channel to the ſouthward, as far as Madeira, there is generally a current ſetting to the S S E.

Thurſday 21. On the evening of the 21ſt, a ſhip was ſeen in the N E, but at too great a diſtance to diſtinguiſh of what country.

Friday 22. The next day the wind came round to the N and N W, ſo that we could no longer conſider ourſelves in the trade wind. Our latitude at noon was 25° 55′ S, longitude 36° 29′ W. Variation of the compaſs three degrees eaſt.

Saturday 23. Saturday 23d, towards night the wind died away, and we had ſome heavy ſhowers of rain, of which we profited, by ſaving a ton of good water. The next day we caught a ſhark and five dolphins.

Tueſday 26. Tueſday 26th, we bent new ſails, and made other neceſſary preparations for encountering the weather that was to be expected in a high latitude. Our latitude at noon was 29° 38′ S, longitude 41° 44′ W. Variation 7° 13′ E. In the afternoon, the wind being weſterly, and blowing ſtrong in ſqualls, ſome butterflies, and other inſects, like what we call horſe-flies, were blown on board of us. No birds were ſeen except ſheerwaters. Our diſtance from the coaſt of Braſil at this time was above 100 leagues.

MARCH. Sunday 2. Sunday 2d, in the forenoon, after ſeeing that every perſon was clean, divine ſervice was performed, according to my uſual cuſtom on this day. I gave to Mr. Fletcher Chriſtian, whom I had before directed to take charge of the third watch, a written order to act as lieutenant.

Saturday 8. Saturday 8th. We were at noon in latitude 36° 50′ S, and longitude 52° 53′ W. The laſt four days, we ſeveral times tried for ſoundings, without finding bottom, though conſiderably to the weſtward of Captain Wallis's track, who

1788. MARCH. had ſoundings at fifty-four fathoms depth, in latitude 35° 40′ S, and longitude 49° 54′ W. This day we tried with two hundred and forty fathoms of line, but did not find bottom; at the ſame time, obſerving a ripling in the water, we tried the current by mooring a keg with one hundred fathoms of line, by which it appeared to run to the N N W, at the rate of a mile and a half *per* hour. By the noon obſervation, however, we were eighteen miles to the ſouthward of our reckoning. In the afternoon we ſaw a turtle floating, and, not having much wind, hoiſted a boat out, and ſent after it; but it was found to be in a putrid ſtate, with a number of crabs feeding upon it.

The change of temperature began now to be ſenſibly felt, there being a variation in the thermometer, ſince yeſterday, of eight degrees. That the people might not ſuffer by their own negligence, I gave orders for their light tropical clothing to be put by, and made them dreſs in a manner more ſuited to a cold climate. I had provided for this before I left England, by giving directions for ſuch clothes to be purchaſed as were neceſſary.

Monday 10. Monday 10th. In the forenoon we ſtruck ſoundings at eighty-three fathoms depth; our latitude 40° 8′ S, and longitude 55° 40′ W. This I conclude to have been near the edge of the bank; for, the wind being at S S W, we ſtood towards the S E; and, after running fourteen miles in that direction, we could find no bottom with one hundred and ſixty fathoms of line. In the night we ſtood towards the W S W, with a ſoutherly wind, and got again into ſoundings. The next day we ſaw a great number of whales of an immenſe ſize, that had two ſpout-holes on the back of the head.—Upon a complaint made to me by the maſter, I found it neceſſary to puniſh Matthew Quintal, one of the

ſeamen, with two dozen laſhes, for inſolence and mutinous behaviour. Before this, I had not had occaſion to puniſh any perſon on board. 1788. MARCH.

On the 12th, we caught a porpoiſe, by ſtriking it with the grains. Every one eat heartily of it; and it was ſo well liked, that no part was waſted. Wedneſday 12.

On the 14th, in the afternoon, we ſaw a land-bird like a lark, and paſſed part of a dead whale that had been left by ſome whalers after they had taken the blubber off. Saw, likewiſe, two ſtrange ſail. The next day, at noon, our latitude was 43° 6′ S, and longitude 58° 42′ W. Had ſoundings at ſeventy-five fathoms; the bottom a fine greeniſh ſand. Saw two hawks. Friday 14.

On the 16th another ſhip was ſeen to the W N W, ſtanding to the northward. Latitude, at noon, 43° 34′ S. We continued running to the ſouthward, keeping in ſoundings. Sunday 16.

On the 19th, at noon, by my account, we were within twenty leagues of Port Deſire; but the wind blowing freſh from the N W. with thick foggy weather, I did not attempt to make the land. We paſſed a good deal of rock-weed, and ſaw many whales, and albatroſſes and other ſea-birds. Wedneſday 19.

On the 20th, at noon, our latitude was 50° 24′ S, and longitude 65° 50′ W. In the afternoon, the wind, which had for ſome time paſt been northerly, ſuddenly ſhifted to the W S W, and blew hard. We ſteered to the S S E; and on the 23d, at two o'clock in the morning, we diſcovered the coaſt of Terra del Fuego bearing S E. At nine in the forenoon we were off Cape St. Diego, the eaſtern part of Terra del Fuego. Obſerved the variation here to be 21° 23′ E. The wind being unfavourable, I thought it more adviſeable to go round to the eaſtward of Staten Land, than to attempt paſſing through Straits le Maire. The two oppoſite Thurſday 20. Sunday 23.

1788. MARCH. poſite coaſts of the Straits exhibited very different appearances. The land of Terra del Fuego hereabouts, though the interior parts are mountainous, yet near the coaſt is of a moderate height, and, at the diſtance we were from it, had not an unpromiſing appearance. The coaſt of Staten Land, near the Straits, is mountainous and craggy, and remarkable for its high peaked hills. Straits le Maire is a fair opening, which cannot well be miſtaken; but if any doubt could remain, the different appearances of the oppoſite ſhores would ſufficiently make the Straits known.

I did not ſail within leſs than ſix leagues of the coaſt, that we might have the wind more regular, and avoid being expoſed to the heavy ſqualls that came off from the land. At noon Cape St. Anthony bore S, and the weſternmoſt of New Year's Iſles S.E. ½ S, five or ſix leagues. Latitude obſerved 54° 28′ S, longitude 64° 4′ W.

The ſight of New Year's Harbour almoſt tempted me to put in; but the lateneſs of the ſeaſon, and the people being in good health, determined me to lay aſide all thoughts of refreſhment, until we ſhould reach Otaheite. At two o'clock in the afternoon, the eaſternmoſt of New Year's Iſles, where Captain Cook obſerved the latitude to be 55° 40′ S, bore from us ſouth four leagues. We ſaw the entrance iſles of New Year's harbour; at the back of which the land is very craggy and mountainous. This muſt be a very convenient port to touch at, as the acceſs to it is ſafe and eaſy. The harbour lies S.S.E, by compaſs, from the N.E part of the eaſternmoſt of the New Year's Iſlands.

About two leagues to the weſtward of Cape St. John, I obſerved the ſeparation of the mountains that Captain Cook has taken notice of, which has the appearance of Staten Land, being there divided into two iſlands.

At

At ſun-ſet, Cape St. John bore S S E five or ſix leagues. The land hereabouts is of leſs height, and not ſo rugged as near New Year's Harbour. The night coming on, I could get no good view of the coaſt near the Cape; and at day-light, next morning, we were at too great a diſtance. 1788. MARCH.

Monday 24th. We had ſtood to the ſouthward all night, with the wind at W S W and S W. At eight in the morning, Cape St. John bore N W, ten leagues diſtant. Soon after we loſt ſight of the land. Monday 24.

From the reſult of my lunar obſervations, aſſiſted by the time-keeper, I make the longitude of the weſt ſide of Straits le Maire to be 64° 48′ W; the eaſternmoſt of the New Year's iſles 63° 52′ W; and the longitude of Cape St. John 63° 19′ W.

In our run from the latitude of 12 degrees S to 48° S, the ſhip was ſet 2° 30′ to the eaſtward by currents; and from the latitude of 48° S to Staten Land, the currents ſet us to the weſtward 2° 43′; which I imagine to have been occaſioned by an indraught into the Straits of Magellan.

From the time we loſt ſight of the land, to the end of the month, we were ſtruggling with bad weather and contrary winds: but on the morning of the 31ſt the wind came to the N N E, and made us entertain great hopes that we ſhould be able to accompliſh our paſſage round the Cape without much difficulty. At noon we were in latitude 60° 1′ S, and in 71° 45′ W longitude, which is 8° 26′ W of the meridian of Cape St. John. This flattering appearance was not of long continuance: in the night the wind became variable, and next day ſettled again in the W and N W, with very bad weather. Monday 31.

On the 2d, in the morning, the wind, which had blown freſh all night from the N W, came round to the S W, and APRIL. Wedneſday 2.

1788. APRIL. and increaſed to a heavy gale. At ſix in the morning the ſtorm exceeded what I had ever met with before; and the ſea, from the frequent ſhifting of the wind, running in contrary directions, broke exceeding high. Our ſhip, however, lay too very well, under a main and fore-ſtay ſail. The gale continued, with ſevere ſqualls of hail and ſleet, the remain-

Friday 4. der of this, and all the next day.—On the 4th, the wind was leſs violent, but far from moderate. With ſo much bad weather, I found it neceſſary to keep a conſtant fire, night and day; and one of the watch always attended to dry the people's wet clothes: and this, I have no doubt, contributed as much to their health as to their comfort.

Our companions in this inhoſpitable region, were albatroſſes, and two beautiful kinds of birds, the ſmall blue petterel, and pintada. A great many of theſe were frequently about the wake of the ſhip, which induced the people to float a line with hooks baited, to endeavour to catch them; and their attempts were ſucceſsful. The method they uſed, was to faſten the bait a foot or two before the hook, and, by giving the line a ſudden jerk when the bird was at the bait, it was hooked in the feet or body.

Sunday 6. On the 6th the weather was moderate, and continued ſo till the 9th, with the wind veering between the N W and S W; of which we were able to take advantage.

Monday 7. On the 7th, obſerved the variation 27° 9′ E; our latitude

Wedneſday 9. 60° 24′ S; and longitude 75° 54′ W. On the 9th, at noon, we were in latitude 59° 31′ S, and our longitude 76° 58′ W, which is farther to the weſt than we had yet been. The weather was now unfavourable again, blowing ſtrong from the weſtward, with a high ſea.

On

On the 10th, we ſaw ſome fiſh, which appeared ſpotted, and about the ſize of bonetos: theſe were the only fiſh we had ſeen in this high latitude. 1788. APRIL.

The ſtormy weather continued with a great ſea. The ſhip now began to complain, and required to be pumped every hour; which was no more than we had reaſon to expect from ſuch a continuance of gales of wind and high ſeas. The decks alſo became ſo leaky, that I was obliged to allot the great cabin, of which I made little uſe, except in fine weather, to thoſe people who had wet births, to hang their hammocks in: and by this means the between decks was leſs crouded. Saturday 12.

Every morning all the hammocks were taken down from where they hung, and, when the weather was too bad to keep them upon deck, they were put in the cabin; ſo that the between decks were cleaned daily, and aired with fires, if the hatchways could not be opened. With all this bad weather, we had the additional mortification to find, at the end of every day, that we were loſing ground; for notwithſtanding our utmoſt exertions, and keeping on the moſt advantageous tacks, (which, if the weather had been at all moderate, would have ſufficiently anſwered our purpoſe) yet the greater part of the time, we were doing little better than drifting before the wind.

Birds as uſual were about the ſhip, and ſome of them caught; and, for the firſt time ſince we left Staten Land, we ſaw ſome whales. This morning, owing to the violent motion of the ſhip, the cook fell and broke one of his ribs, and another man, by a fall, diſlocated his ſhoulder. The gunner, who had the charge of a watch, was laid up with the rheumatiſm: and this was the firſt ſick liſt that appeared on board the ſhip. The time of full moon, which was approaching, made Sunday 13.

1788. APRIL. made me entertain hopes, that, after that period we ſhould experience ſome change of wind or weather in our favour; but the event did not at all anſwer our expectations. The latitude, at noon this day, was 58° 9′ S, and longitude 76° 1′ W.

As we caught a good many birds, but which were all lean, and taſted fiſhy, we tried an experiment upon them, which ſucceeded admirably. By keeping them cooped up, and cramming them with ground corn, they improved wonderfully in a ſhort time; ſo that the pintada birds became as fine as ducks, and the albatroſſes were as fat, and not inferior in taſte to fine geeſe. Some of the latter birds were caught that meaſured ſeven feet between the extremities of the wings, when ſpread. This unexpected ſupply came very opportunely; for none of our live ſtock remained except hogs, the ſheep and poultry not being hardy enough to ſtand the ſeverity of the weather.

Sunday 20. This morning, the wind died away, and we had a calm for a few hours, which gave us hopes that the next would be a more favourable wind. A hog was killed for the ſhip's company, which gave them an excellent meal. Towards noon, to our great diſappointment, the wind ſprung up again from the weſtward, and in the afternoon blew ſtrong, with ſnow and hail ſtorms.

Monday 21. This was the ſecond day after the full moon; but, as I have remarked before, it had no influence on the weather. At noon our latitude was 58° 31′ S, and longitude 70° 7′ W, which is near ſeven degrees to the eaſtward of our ſituation on the morning of the 9th inſtant, when we had advanced the fartheſt in our power to the weſtward, being then in 76° 58′ W, three degrees to the weſt of Cape Deſeada, the weſt part of the Straits of Magellan; and

at

at this time we were 3° 52′ to the eaſt of it, and hourly loſing ground. 1788. APRIL.

It was with much concern I ſaw how hopeleſs, and even unjuſtifiable it was, to perſiſt any longer in attempting a paſſage this way to the Society Iſlands. We had been thirty days in this tempeſtuous ocean. At one time we had advanced ſo far to the weſtward as to have a fair proſpect of making our paſſage round; but from that period hard gales of weſterly wind had continued without intermiſſion, a few hours excepted, which, to borrow an expreſſion in Lord Anſon's voyage, were "like the elements drawing "breath to return upon us with redoubled violence." The ſeaſon was now too far advanced for us to expect more favourable winds or weather, and we had ſufficiently experienced the impoſſibility of beating round againſt the wind, or of advancing at all without the help of a fair wind, for which there was little reaſon to hope. Another conſideration, which had great weight with me, was, that if I perſiſted in my attempt this way, and ſhould, after all, fail to get round, it would occaſion ſuch a loſs of time, that our arrival at Otaheite, ſoon enough to return in the proper ſeaſon by the Eaſt Indies, would be rendered precarious. On the other hand, the prevalence of the weſterly winds in high ſouthern latitudes, left me no reaſon to doubt of making a quick paſſage to the Cape of Good Hope, and thence to the eaſtward round New Holland. Having maturely conſidered all circumſtances, I determined to bear away for the Cape of Good Hope; and at five o'clock on the evening of the 22d, the wind then blowing ſtrong at weſt, I ordered the helm to be put a weather, to the great joy of every perſon on board. Our ſick liſt at this time had increaſed to eight, moſtly with rheumatic Tueſday 22.

1788. APRIL. complaints: in other reſpects the people were in good health, though exceedingly jaded.

The paſſage round Cape Horn, into the South Seas, during the ſummer months, has ſeldom been attended with difficulty, and is to be preferred, in the moderate ſeaſons, to the more diſtant route to the eaſtward, round the Cape of Good Hope and New Holland. If we had been one month earlier, or perhaps leſs, I doubt not but we ſhould have effected our paſſage.

The ſoundings that are met with off the coaſt of America, from the latitude of 36° S to the ſouthward, are very convenient to enable ſhips to judge of their diſtance from the land, as thick fogs are very frequent near that coaſt. If the winds are favourable, to go through Straits le Maire muſt conſiderably ſhorten the paſſage round Cape Horn, as all the diſtance ſaved is ſo much gained to the weſtward. I am informed, that ſeveral harbours have been lately diſcovered by the South Sea whalers, on the north ſide of Staten Iſland, that afford ſafe anchorage, with ſupplies of wood and water.

While we were off Cape Horn, I did not obſerve that our ſituation was at all affected by currents.

CHAP. III.

Paſſage towards the Cape of Good Hope, and ſearch after Triſtan da Cunha.—Arrival at Falſe Bay.—Occurrences there.—Reports concerning the Groſvenor's People.—Departure from the Cape.

THE weſterly winds and ſtormy weather continuing, gave me no reaſon to repent of my determination. On the 25th, at noon, we were in latitude 54° 16′ S, and longitude 57° 4′ W. The neareſt of the Falkland Iſlands, by my reckoning, then bore N 13° W; diſtance 23 leagues. Our ſtock of water being ſufficient to ſerve us to the Cape of Good Hope, I did not think it worth while to ſtop at theſe iſlands, as the refreſhment we might obtain there, would ſcarce repay us for the expence of time: we therefore continued our courſe towards the NE and ENE. 1788. APRIL. Friday 25.

On the 9th of May, at eight o'clock in the evening, we were near the ſituation of Triſtan da Cunha, our latitude being 37° 7′ S, and longitude 15° 26′ W. All the afternoon, the weather had been clear enough for land of a moderate height to be ſeen at leaſt ſeven leagues; I therefore concluded that we had not yet paſſed the meridian of the iſland; for the moſt weſtern poſition given to it from any authority, is 15° 0′ W. MAY. Friday 9.

As I wiſhed to make this iſland, we kept our wind on different tacks during the night, that we might be nearly in the ſame place at day-light in the morning, as on

1788. MAY. the preceding evening: in the morning, no land being in ſight, we continued to ſteer to the eaſtward.

Saturday 10. We ran on all day, having clear weather, but without ſeeing any thing to indicate our being near land. At noon our latitude obſerved was 37° 27′ S, which being more to the ſouthward than we had reaſon to expect, I altered the courſe to the northward, and ſteered N E all the afternoon. At ſix o'clock in the evening, we were in latitude 37° 0′ S, and longitude 12° 42′ W, having a clear horizon, but not the leaſt ſign of being in the neighbourhood of land. With the night came thick rainy weather, and we were now to the eaſtward of the ſituation aſcribed to Triſtan da Cunha; I therefore determined to give over the ſearch, and to reſume our courſe towards the Cape of Good Hope.

The iſland of Triſtan da Cunha, by Robertſon's Elements, is laid down in 37° 12′ S latitude, and 13° 23′ W longitude. In Captain Cook's general map, prefixed to his *laſt voyage*, it is placed in the ſame latitude, but in 15 degrees W longitude. From our track, and the clearneſs of the weather, I am convinced, if the latitude aſcribed to it as above is correct, that it is not to be found between the meridians of 16° 30′ W, and 12° 30′ W. On the 13th I had a number of lunar obſervations for the longitude, the mean of which agreed exactly with the time-keeper *.

In this paſſage the weather was generally ſo cloudy, that I had few opportunities to make obſervations of any kind, except for the noon latitudes. I could not determine when we croſſed the line of no variation. The two

* In Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Plans, which I had not with me, the northernmoſt of the *Iſlands of Triſtan d'Acunha* is placed in latitude 37° 22′ S, and longitude 13° 17′ W. I think it probable we miſſed them by being too much to the northward.

neareſt

neareſt obſervations to it, were, the firſt in 39° 51′ S latitude, and 26° 11′ W longitude, where the variation of the compaſs was found to be 3° 17′ E; and the other in latitude 35° 30′ S, and longitude 5° 21′ W, where I obſerved the variation 11° 35′ W; between theſe we had no intermediate obſervation for the variation. 1788. MAY.

Thurſday 22, at two in the afternoon, we ſaw the Table Mountain of the Cape of Good Hope. As it is reckoned unſafe riding in Table Bay at this time of the year, I ſteered for Falſe Bay. The next evening we anchored in the outer part, and on the forenoon of the 24th got the ſhip ſecured in Simon's Bay, which is in the inner part of Falſe Bay. When moored, Noah's ark bore S 35° E three quarters of a mile, and the hoſpital S 72° W. We found lying here, one outward bound Dutch Indiaman, five other Dutch ſhips, and a French ſhip. Thurſday 22. Saturday 24.

After ſaluting the fort, which was returned by an equal number of guns, I went on ſhore, and diſpatches were ſent away to Cape Town, to acquaint the governor of our arrival. A Dutch ſhip at this time lying in Table Bay, bound for Europe, I ſent letters by her to the Admiralty. It is very unuſual for ſhips to be in Table Bay ſo late in the year, on account of the ſtrong N W winds. April is the time limited.

I gave the neceſſary directions for getting our wants ſupplied. The ſhip required to be caulked in every part, for ſhe was become ſo leaky, that we had been obliged to pump every hour in our paſſage from Cape Horn. This we immediately ſet about, as well as repairing our ſails and rigging. The ſevere weather we had met with, and the leakineſs of the ſhip, made it neceſſary to examine into the ſtate of all the ſtores and proviſions. Of the latter, a good deal was found damaged, particularly the bread.—The

1788. MAY. time-keeper I took on ſhore to aſcertain its rate, and other inſtruments, to make the neceſſary aſtronomical obſervations.—Freſh meat, with ſoft bread, and plenty of vegetables, were iſſued daily to the ſhip's company, the whole time we remained here. A few days after our arrival, I went over to Cape Town, and waited on his excellency M. Vander Graaf, the governor, who obligingly arranged matters ſo much to our advantage, that we ſcarcely felt the inconvenience of being at a diſtance from the Cape Town, whence we received all our ſupplies.

The Cape Town is conſiderably increaſed within the laſt eight years. Its reſpectability, with regard to ſtrength, has kept pace with its other enlargements, and rendered it very ſecure againſt any attempt which is not made with conſiderable force. Great attention is paid to military order and diſcipline; and monthly ſignals are eſtabliſhed to communicate with their ſhipping as they arrive near the coaſt, that they may not run unawares into the hands of an enemy. I found every thing much dearer than when I was here in 1780. Sheep coſt four Spaniſh dollars each, and were ſo ſmall, that it anſwered better to purchaſe the mutton, for the ſhip's daily uſe, at four pence per pound.

During our ſtay here, I took care to procure ſeeds and plants that would be valuable at Otaheite, and the different places we might touch at in our way thither. In this I was greatly aſſiſted by colonel Gordon, the commander of the troops. In company with this gentleman, the loſs of the Groſvenor Eaſt Indiaman was mentioned: on this ſubject, colonel Gordon expreſſed great concern, that, from any thing he had ſaid, hopes were ſtill entertained to flatter the affectionate wiſhes of the ſurviving friends of thoſe unfortunate people. He ſaid that, in his travels

vels into the Caffre country, he had met with a native who deſcribed to him, that there was a white woman among his countrymen, who had a child, and that ſhe frequently embraced the child, and cried moſt violently. This was all he (the colonel) could underſtand; and, being then on his return home, with his health much impaired by fatigue, the only thing that he could do, was to make a friend of the native, by preſents, and promiſes of reward, on condition that he would take a letter to this woman, and bring him back an anſwer. Accordingly he wrote letters in Engliſh, French, and Dutch, deſiring, that ſome ſign or mark might be returned, either by writing with a burnt ſtick, or by any means ſhe ſhould be able to deviſe, to ſatisfy him that ſhe was there; and that on receiving ſuch token from her, every effort ſhould be made to enſure her ſafety and eſcape. But the Caffre, although apparently delighted with the commiſſion which he had undertaken, never returned, nor has the colonel ever heard any thing more of him, though he had been inſtructed in methods of conveying information through the Hottentot country. 1788. MAY.

To this account, that I may not again have occaſion to introduce ſo melancholy a ſubject, I ſhall add the little information I received reſpecting it, when I re-viſited the Cape, in my return towards Europe.—A reputable farmer, of the name of Holhouſen, who lives at Swellendam, eight days journey from the Cape, had information from ſome Caffre Hottentots, that at a crawl, or village, in their country, there were white men and women. On this intelligence, Mr. Holhouſen aſked permiſſion of the governor to make an expedition, with ſome of the farmers, into the country, requiring a thouſand rix-dollars to bear his expences. The governor referred him to Mr. Wocke,

1788. MAY. the Landros of Graverennet, a new colony, in his way. But from the place where Mr. Holhouſen lives, to the Landros, Mr. Wocke's reſidence, is a month's journey, which he did not chuſe to undertake at an uncertainty, as Mr. Wocke might have diſapproved of the enterprize. It was in October laſt that Mr. Holhouſen offered to go on this ſervice. He was one of the party who went along the ſea-coaſt in ſearch of theſe unfortunate people, when a few of them firſt made their appearance at the Cape. I am, however, informed, that the Dutch farmers are fond of making expeditions into the country, that they may have opportunities of taking away cattle; and this, I apprehend, to be one of the chief reaſons why undertakings of this kind are not encouraged.

On the 13th of June, the Dublin Eaſt Indiaman arrived from England; on board of which ſhip, was a party of the 77th regiment, under the command of colonel Balfour.

The reſult of my lunar obſervations gave for the longitude of Simon's Bay, 18° 48′ 34″ E; the latitude 34° 11′ 34″ S. The time-keeper likewiſe made the longitude 18° 47′ E. The longitude, as eſtabliſhed by former obſervations, is 18° 33′ E. The variation of the compaſs on ſhore was 24° 4′ W; but, on board of the ſhip, it was only 22° 28′ W. —The time of high water was three quarters paſt two on the full and change, and it then flowed ſix feet.

With reſpect to the Cape Promontory, it lies about three miles eaſt of the meridian of Simon's Town. All the tables of latitude and longitude place the Cape in 34° 29′ S latitude; but from many obſervations off it, with good inſtruments, I make it to lie in 34° 23′ S, which agrees with its ſituation as laid down in major Rennel's map. The part which I call the Cape, is the ſouthernmoſt point of

of the land between Table Bay and False Bay; but the Dutch consider the westernmost part of the coast to be the Cape. 1788. JUNE.

On the 29th, being ready for sea, I took the time-keeper and instruments on board. The error of the time-keeper was 3′ 33″, 2 too slow for the mean time at Greenwich, and its rate of going 3″ per day, losing. The thermometer, during our stay here, was from 51 to 66 degrees. Sunday 29.

We had been thirty-eight days at this place, and my people had received all the advantage that could be derived from the refreshments of every kind that are here to be met with. We sailed at four o'clock this afternoon, and saluted the platform with thirteen guns as we ran out of the bay, which were returned. JULY. Tuesday 1.

CHAP. IV.

Paſſage towards Van Diemen's Land.—Make the Iſland of St. Paul.—Arrival in Adventure Bay.—Natives ſeen.—Sail from Van Diemen's Land.

1788. JULY. WE loſt ſight of the land the day after leaving Falſe Bay, and ſteered towards the E S E, having variable winds the firſt week, with much thunder, lightning, and rain. The remainder of this paſſage, the winds were moſtly between the S and W, blowing ſtrong. There were almoſt every day great numbers of pintada, albatroſſes, blue petterels, and other oceanic birds, about us; but it was obſerved, that if the wind came from the northward, only for a few hours, the birds generally left us, and their preſence again was the forerunner of a ſoutherly wind.

Sunday 13. The variation of the compaſs was 30° 34′ W, which was the greateſt variation we found in this track. Our latitude 36° 28′ S, and longitude 39° 0′ E.

Sunday 20. The latitude, at noon, was 40° 30′ S, and longitude 60° 7′ E. We were at this time ſcudding under the fore-ſail and cloſe-reefed main-top-ſail, the wind blowing ſtrong from the weſt. An hour after noon the gale increaſed, and blew with ſo much violence, that the ſhip was almoſt driven forecaſtle under, before we could get the ſails clewed up. As ſoon as the ſails were taken in, we brought the ſhip to the wind, lowered the lower yards, and

and got the top-gallant-maſts upon deck, which eaſed the ſhip very much. We remained lying to till eight the next morning, when we bore away under a reefed fore-ſail. In the afternoon the ſea ran ſo high, that it became very unſafe to ſtand on: we therefore brought to the wind again, and remained lying to all night, without accident, excepting that the man at the ſteerage was thrown over the wheel, and much bruiſed. Towards noon, the violence of the ſtorm abated, and we again bore away under the reefed fore-ſail. Our latitude, at noon, 38° 49′ S: in the afternoon ſaw ſome whales. 1788. JULY. Monday 21. Tueſday 22.

We continued running to the eaſtward in this parallel, it being my intention to make the iſland St. Paul. On Monday the 28th, at ſix in the morning, we ſaw the iſland, bearing E by N, 12 leagues diſtant: between 10 and 11 o'clock, we ran along the ſouth ſide, at about a league diſtant from the ſhore. There was a verdure that covered the higher parts of the land; but I believe it was nothing more than moſs, which is commonly found on the tops of moſt rocky iſlands in theſe latitudes. We ſaw ſeveral whales near the ſhore. The extent of this iſland is five miles from E to W; and about two or three from N to S. As we paſſed the eaſt end, we ſaw a remarkable high ſugar-loaf rock, abreaſt of which, I have been informed, is good anchorage in 23 fathoms, the eaſt point bearing S.W by S, by true compaſs. I had this information from the captain of a Dutch packet, in which I returned to Europe. He likewiſe ſaid there was good freſh water on the iſland, and a hot ſpring, which boiled fiſh in as great perfection as on a fire. By his account, the latitude, which he obſerved in the road, is 38° 39′ S; and from the anchoring place, the iſland of Monday 28.

1788. JULY. Amſterdam was in ſight to the northward. We had fair weather all the forenoon, but juſt at noon, a ſquall came on, which was unfavourable for our obſervation. I had, however, two ſets of double altitudes, and a good altitude exactly at noon, according to the time-keeper. The reſult of theſe give for the latitude of the center of St. Paul, 38° 47′ S. The longitude I make 77° 39′ E. The variation of the compaſs, taking the mean of what it was obſerved to be the day before we ſaw the iſland, and the day after, is 19° 30′ W.

At noon, we were three leagues paſt the iſland. We kept on towards the E S E, and for ſeveral days continued to ſee rock-weed, which is remarked to be generally the caſe after ſhips paſs St. Paul's; but to the weſtward of it, very ſeldom any is ſeen.

AUGUST. Wedneſday 13. In latitude 44° 16′ S, longitude 122° 7′ E, I obſerved the variation of the compaſs to be 6° 23′ W. I had no opportunity to obſerve it again till in the latitude of 43° 56′ S, longitude 133° 16′ E, when it was 1° 38′ E; ſo that we had paſſed the line of no variation. In 1780, on board the Reſolution, in latitude 44° 23′ S, longitude 131° 28′ E, the variation was obſerved 6° 0′ W, which is a remarkable difference. We had much bad weather, with ſnow and hail, and in our approach to Van Diemen's Land, nothing was ſeen to indicate the nearneſs of the coaſt, except a ſeal, when we were within the diſtance of 20 leagues.

Tueſday 19. At two o'clock this afternoon, we ſaw the rock named the Mewſtone, that lies near the S W cape of Van Diemen's Land, bearing N E about ſix leagues. The wind blew ſtrong from the N W. As ſoon as we had paſſed the Mewſtone, we were ſheltered from a very heavy ſea, which ran from the weſtward. At eight o'clock at night we

we were abreaſt of the ſouth cape, when the wind became light and variable. Saw ſeveral fires inland. 1788. AUGUST.

The Mewſtone is a high bold rock, that lies five leagues to the SE of the SW cape, and is the part that all ſhips bound this way ſhould endeavour to make. Its latitude is 43° 46′ or 47′. Several iſlands lie to the northward, between that and the main, among which, bearing N by W from the Mewſtone, is a high rock much reſembling it; and NNE from the Mewſtone, on the main land, is a remarkable high mountain, which, in this direction, appears notched like a cock's comb; but as viewed from the eaſtward, ſeems round.

All the 20th, we were endeavouring to get into Adventure Bay, but were prevented by variable winds. The next morning, at five o'clock, we anchored in the outer part, and at ſun-riſe weighed again: at noon, we anchored well in the bay, and moored the ſhip, Penguin Iſland bearing N 57° ½ E, about two miles diſtant; Cape Frederic Henry N 23° E; and the mouth of the Lagoon S 16° E. Wedneſday 20.

In our paſſage from the Cape of Good Hope, the winds were moſtly from the weſtward, with very boiſterous weather: but one great advantage, that this ſeaſon of the year has over the ſummer months is, in being free from fogs. I have already remarked, that the approach of ſtrong ſoutherly winds is announced by many kinds of birds of the albatroſs or petterel tribe, and the abatement of the gale, or a ſhift of wind to the northward, by their keeping away. The thermometer alſo very quickly ſhews when a change of theſe winds may be expected, by varying ſometimes ſix and ſeven degrees in its height. I have reaſon to believe, that after we paſſed the iſland St. Paul, there

1788. AUGUST. there was a weatherly current; the ſhip being every day to the weſtward of the reckoning, which in the whole, from St. Paul to Van Diemen's land, made a difference of four degrees between the longitude by the reckoning and the true longitude.

Thurſday 21. The ſhip being moored, I went in a boat to look out for the moſt convenient place to wood and water at, which I found to be at the weſt end of the beach: for the ſurf, though conſiderable, was leſs there than at any other part of the bay. The water was in a gully about ſixty yards from the beach; it was perfectly good, but being only a collection from the rains, the place is always dry in the ſummer months; for we found no water in it when I was here with captain Cook in January, 1777.—We had very little ſucceſs in hauling the ſeine; about twenty ſmall flounders, and flat-headed fiſh, called foxes, were all that were taken.

I found no ſigns of the natives having lately frequented this bay, or of any European veſſels having been here ſince the Reſolution and Diſcovery in 1777. From ſome of the old trunks of trees, then cut down, I ſaw ſhoots about twenty-five feet high, and fourteen inches in circumference.

In the evening, I returned on board. The next morn-
Friday 22. ing, the 22d, at day-light, a party was ſent on ſhore for wooding and watering, under the command of Mr. Chriſtian and the gunner; and I directed that one man ſhould be conſtantly employed in waſhing the people's clothes. There was ſo much ſurf that the wood was obliged to be rafted off in bundles to the boat. Mr. Nelſon informed me, that, in his walks to-day, he ſaw a tree, in a very healthy ſtate, which he meaſured, and found to be

thirty-three

thirty-three feet and a half in girt; its height was proportioned to its bulk. 1788. AUGUST.

Saturday the 23d, The ſurf was rather greater than yeſterday, which very much interrupted our wooding and watering. Nelſon to-day picked up a male opoſſum that had been recently killed, or had died, for we could not perceive any wound, unleſs it had received a blow on the back, where there was a bare place about the ſize of a ſhilling. It meaſured fourteen inches from the ears to the beginning of the tail, which was exactly the ſame length. Saturday 23.

Moſt of the foreſt trees were at this time ſhedding their bark. There are three kinds, which are diſtinguiſhed from each other by their leaves, though the wood appears to be the ſame. Many of them are full one hundred and fifty feet high; but moſt of thoſe that we cut down, were decayed at the heart. There are, beſides the foreſt trees, ſeveral other kinds that are firm good wood, and may be cut for moſt purpoſes, except maſts; neither are the foreſt trees good for maſts, on account of their weight, and the difficulty of finding them thoroughly ſound. Mr. Nelſon aſſerted that they ſhed their bark every year, and that they increaſe more from the ſeed than by ſuckers.

I found the tide made a difference of full two feet in the height of the water in the lake, at the back of the beach. At high water, it was very brackiſh, but at low tide, it was perfectly freſh to the taſte, and ſoap ſhewed no ſign of its being the leaſt impregnated. We had better ſucceſs in fiſhing on board the ſhip, than by hauling the ſeine on ſhore; for, with hooks and lines, a number of fine rock cod were caught.—I ſaw to-day ſeveral eagles, ſome beautiful blue-plumaged herons, and a great variety

1788. AUGUST. of paroquets. A few oyſter-catchers and gulls were generally about the beach, and in the lake a few wild ducks.

Monday 25. Being in want of plank, I directed a ſaw-pit to be dug, and employed ſome of the people to ſaw trees into plank. The greater part of this week the winds were moderate,

Friday 29. with unſettled weather. On Friday it blew ſtrong from the S W, with rain, thunder, and lightning. We continued to catch fiſh in ſufficient quantities for every body, and had better ſucceſs with the ſeine. — We were fortunate, alſo, in angling in the lake, where we caught ſome very fine tench. Some of the people felt a ſickneſs from eating muſcles, that were gathered from the rocks; but I believe it was occaſioned by eating too many. We found ſome ſpider-crabs, moſt of them not good, being the female ſort, and out of ſeaſon. The males were tolerably good, and were known by the ſmallneſs of their two fore claws, or feeders. We ſaw the trunk of a dead tree, on which had been cut "A. D. 1773." The figures were very diſtinct; even the ſlips made with the knife were diſcernible. This muſt have been done by ſome of captain Furneaux's people, in March, 1773, fifteen years before. The marks of the knife remaining ſo unaltered, I imagine the tree muſt have been dead when it was cut; but it ſerves to ſhew the durability of the wood, for it was perfectly ſound at this time. I ſhot two gannets: theſe birds were of the ſame ſize as thoſe in England; their colour is a beautiful white, with the wings and tail tipped with jet black, and the top and back of the head of a very fine yellow. Their feet were black, with four claws, on each of which, was a yellow line the whole length of the foot. The bill was four inches long, without noſtrils, and very taper and ſharp-pointed.

The

The eaſt ſide of the bay being not ſo thick of wood as the other parts, and the ſoil being good, I fixed on it, at Nelſon's recommendation, as the moſt proper ſituation for planting ſome of the fruit-trees which I had brought from the Cape of Good Hope. A circumſtance much againſt any thing ſucceeding here, is, that in the dry ſeaſon, the fires made by the natives are apt to communicate to the dried graſs and underwood, and to ſpread in ſuch a manner as to endanger every thing that cannot bear a ſevere ſcorching. We, however, choſe what we thought the ſafeſt ſituations, and planted three fine young apple-trees, nine vines, ſix plantain-trees, a number of orange and lemon-ſeed, cherry-ſtones, plum, peach, and apricot-ſtones, pumkins, alſo two ſorts of Indian corn, and apple and pear kernels. The ground is well adapted for the trees, being of a rich loamy nature. The ſpot where we made our plantation was clear of underwood; and we marked the trees that ſtood neareſt to the different things which were planted. Nelſon followed the circuit of the bay, planting in ſuch places as appeared moſt eligible. I have great hopes that ſome of theſe articles will ſucceed. The particular ſituations I had deſcribed in my ſurvey of this place, but I was unfortunately prevented from bringing it home. Near the watering place, likewiſe, we planted on a flat, which appeared a favourable ſituation, ſome onions, cabbage-roots, and potatoes. 1788. AUGUST.

For ſome days paſt, a number of whales were ſeen in the bay. They were of the ſame kind as thoſe we had generally met with before, having two blow-holes on the back of the head. SEPTEMBER.

On the night of the 11t of September, we obſerved, for the firſt time, ſigns of the natives being in the neighbourhood. Fires were ſeen on the low land, near Cape Frederick Monday 1.

1788. SEPTEMBER. Henry, and at day-light, we ſaw the natives with our glaſſes. As I expected they would come round to us, I remained all the forenoon near the wooding and watering parties, making obſervations, the morning being very favourable for that purpoſe. I was, however, diſappointed in my conjecture, for the natives did not appear, and there was too great a ſurf for a boat to land on the part where we had ſeen them.

Tueſday 2. The natives not coming near us, I determined to go after them, and we ſet out, in a boat, towards Cape Frederick Henry, where we arrived about eleven o'clock. I found landing impracticable, and therefore came to a grapnel, in hopes of their coming to us, for we had paſſed ſeveral fires. After waiting near an hour, I was ſurpriſed to ſee Nelſon's aſſiſtant come out of the wood: he had wandered thus far in ſearch of plants, and told me that he had met with ſome of the natives. Soon after we heard their voices like the cackling of geeſe, and twenty perſons came out of the wood, twelve of whom went round to ſome rocks, where the boat could get nearer to the ſhore than we then were. Thoſe who remained behind were women.

We approached within twenty yards of them, but there was no poſſibility of landing, and I could only throw to the ſhore, tied up in paper, the preſents which I intended for them. I ſhowed the different articles as I tied them up, but they would not untie the paper till I made an appearance of leaving them. They then opened the parcels, and, as they took the articles out, placed them on their heads. On ſeeing this, I returned towards them, when they inſtantly put every thing out of their hands, and would not appear to take notice of any thing that we had given them. After throwing a few more beads and nails on ſhore, I made ſigns for them to go to the ſhip, and they, likewiſe,

likewiſe, made ſigns for me to land; but as this could not be effected, I left them, in hopes of a nearer interview at the watering place. 1788. SEPTEMBER.

When they firſt came in ſight, they made a prodigious clattering in their ſpeech, and held their arms over their heads. They ſpoke ſo quick, that I could not catch one ſingle word they uttered. We recollected one man, whom we had formerly ſeen among the party of the natives that came to us in 1777, and who is particulariſed in the account of Captain Cook's laſt voyage, for his humour and deformity. Some of them had a ſmall ſtick, two or three feet long, in their hands, but no other weapon.

Their colour, as Captain Cook remarks, is a dull black: their ſkin is ſcarified about their ſhoulders and breaſt. They were of a middle ſtature, or rather below it. One of them was diſtinguiſhed by his body being coloured with red oker, but all the others were painted black, with a kind of ſoot, which was laid on ſo thick over their faces and ſhoulders, that it is difficult to ſay what they were like.

They ran very nimbly over the rocks, had a very quick ſight, and caught the ſmall beads and nails, which I threw to them, with great dexterity. They talked to us ſitting on their heels, with their knees cloſe into their armpits, and were perfectly naked.

In my return towards the ſhip, I landed at the point of the harbour near Penguin Iſland, and from the hills, ſaw the water on the other ſide of the low iſthmus of Cape Frederick Henry, which forms the bay of that name. It is very extenſive, and in, or near, the middle of the bay, there is a low iſland. From this ſpot, it has the appearance of being a very good and convenient harbour.

1788. SEPTEMBER.

The account which I had from Brown, the botaniſt's aſſiſtant, was, that in his ſearch for plants, he had met an old man, a young woman, and two or three children. The old man at firſt appeared alarmed, but became familiar on being preſented with a knife. He nevertheleſs ſent away the young woman, who went very reluctantly. He ſaw ſome miſerable wigwams, in which were nothing but a few kanguroo ſkins ſpread on the ground, and a baſket made of ruſhes.

Among the wood that we cut here, we found many ſcorpions and centipes, with numerous black ants that were an inch long. We ſaw no muſquitos, though in the ſummer months they are very troubleſome.

What is called the New Zealand tea plant, grew here in great abundance; ſo that it was not only gathered and dried to uſe as tea, but made excellent brooms. It bears a ſmall pointed leaf, of a pleaſant ſmell, and its ſeed is contained in a berry, about the ſize of a pea, notched into five equal parts on the top. The ſoil, on the weſt and ſouth ſides of the bay, is black mould, with a mixture of fine white ſand, and is very rich. The trees are lofty and large, and the underwood grows ſo cloſe together, that in many places it is impaſſable. The eaſt ſide of the bay is a rich loamy ſoil; but, near the tops of the hills, is very much incumbered with ſtones and rocks: the underwood thinly placed and ſmall. The trees on the S, S E, and S W ſides of the hills, grow to a larger ſize than thoſe that are expoſed to the oppoſite points; for the ſides of the trees, open or expoſed to the north winds are naked, with few branches; while the other ſides are in a flouriſhing ſtate. From this I do not infer, that the equatorial are more hurtful than the polar winds; but that the trees, by their

their ſituation, were more ſheltered from the one than from the other. 1788. SEPTEMBER.

A calm prevented our ſailing to day. The friendly interview which we had had with the natives, made me expect that they would have paid us a viſit; but we ſaw nothing more of them, except fires in the night, upon the low land to the northward. Wedneſday 3.

The reſult of the obſervations which I made here, reduced to Penguin Iſland, place it in 43° 21′ 11″ S latitude, and in longitude 147° 33′ 29″ E, which ſcarcely differs from the obſervations made in 1777. The variation of the compaſs, obſerved on ſhore, was 8° 38′ E; and on board the ſhip 8° 29′ E. It was high water, at the change of the moon, at 49 minutes paſt ſix in the morning. The riſe was two feet eight inches. Southerly winds, if of any continuance, make a conſiderable difference in the height of the tides.

This forenoon, having a pleaſant breeze at N W, we weighed anchor, and ſailed out of Adventure Bay. At noon the ſouthernmoſt part of Maria's Iſles bore N 52° E, about five leagues diſtant; Penguin Iſland S 86° W; and Cape Frederick Henry N 65° W. In this poſition we had ſoundings at 57 fathoms, a ſandy bottom. Latitude obſerved 43° 22′ S. Thurſday 4.

The ſouthern part of Maria's Iſlands lie in latitude 43° 16′ S. The country is not in general woody, but in ſome of the interior parts, there appeared great abundance. Among theſe iſlands, I have no doubt of there being many convenient places for ſhiping. On the eaſt ſide, in latitude 42° 42′ S, and longitude 148° 24′ E, in July, 1789, Captain Cox, of the Mercury, found a convenient and ſecure harbour from all winds, which he named

1788. SEPTEMBER. Oyſter Bay. Here he found wood, water, and fiſh, in great abundance. It has two outlets, and lies north, a little eaſterly, diſtant 34 miles from the ſouth-eaſternmoſt iſland, or point, ſeen from Adventure Bay.

Adventure Bay is a convenient and ſafe place for any number of ſhips to take in wood and water, during the ſummer months: but in the winter, when the ſoutherly winds are ſtrong, the ſurf, on all parts of the ſhore, makes the landing exceedingly troubleſome. The bay of Frederick Henry may, perhaps, be found preferable, as it appears to be equally eaſy of acceſs. The ſoundings in Adventure Bay are very regular: near the weſt ſhore, are ſome patches of weed, but no ſhoal or danger, the depth on them being from five to nine fathoms.

CHAP. V.

Rocky Iſlands diſcovered.—See the Iſland Maitea, and arrive at Otaheite.—Ship crouded by the Natives.

BEING clear of the land, we ſteered towards the ESE, it being my intention to paſs to the ſouthward of New Zealand, as I expected in that route to meet with conſtant weſterly winds; in which, however, I was diſappointed, for they proved variable, and frequently from the eaſtward blowing ſtrong, with thick miſty weather. The thermometer varied from 41 to 46 degrees. 1788. SEPTEMBER.

On the 14th, at noon, we were in 49° 24′ S latitude, and in 168° 3′ E longitude, which is on the ſame meridian with the ſouth end of New Zealand. We altered our courſe, ſteering to the northward of eaſt, and frequently ſaw rock-weed, which I ſuppoſed to have drifted from New Zealand. The ſea now became rougher, from our being expoſed to a long ſwell, which came from the NE. Sunday 14.

On the 19th, at day-light, we diſcovered a cluſter of ſmall rocky iſlands, bearing eaſt by north four leagues diſtant from us. We had ſeen no birds, or any thing to indicate the nearneſs of land, except patches of rock-weed, for which the vicinity of New Zealand ſufficiently accounted. The wind being at NE prevented our near approach to theſe iſles; ſo that we were not leſs than three leagues diſtant in paſſing to the ſouthward of them. The weather was too thick to ſee diſtinctly: their extent was only 3½ miles from eaſt Friday 19.

to

1788. SEPTEMBER. to weſt, and about half a league from north to ſouth: their number, including the ſmaller ones, was thirteen. I could not obſerve any verdure on any of them: there were white ſpots like patches of ſnow; but, as Captain Cook, in deſcribing the land of New Zealand, near Cape South, ſays, in many places there are patches like white marble, it is probable that what we ſaw might be of the ſame kind as what he had obſerved. The weſternmoſt of theſe iſlands is the largeſt; they are of ſufficient height to be ſeen at the diſtance of ſeven leagues from a ſhip's deck. When the eaſternmoſt bore north, I tried for ſoundings, being then 10 miles diſtant from the neareſt of them, and found bottom at 75 fathoms, a fine white ſand: and again at noon, having run ſix leagues more to the E S E, we had ſoundings at 104 fathoms, a fine brimſtone-coloured ſand. The latitude of theſe iſlands is 47° 44′ S; their longitude 179° 7′ E, which is about 145 leagues to the eaſt of the Traps, near the ſouth end of New Zealand. Variation of the compaſs here 17° E. While in ſight of the iſlands, we ſaw ſome penguins, and a white kind of gull with a forked tail. Captain Cook's track, in 1773, was near this ſpot, but he did not ſee the iſlands: he ſaw ſeals and penguins hereabouts, but conſidered New Zealand to be the neareſt land. I have named them after the ſhip, the Bounty Iſles.

Sunday 21. This day we ſaw a ſeal, ſome rock-weed, and a great many albatroſſes. I tried for ſoundings, but found no bottom at 230 fathoms depth. Our latitude 47° 32′ S, longitude 182° 36′ E.

OCTOBER. Thurſday 2. Were in 40° 27′ S latitude, and 214° 4′ E longitude. It being calm, and a number of ſmall blubbers about the ſhip, took up ſome in a bucket, but I ſaw no difference between

tween them and the common blubbers in the Weſt Indies. 1788. OCTOBER.
We frequently, in the night-time, obſerved the ſea to be covered with luminous ſpots, cauſed by prodigious quantities of ſmall blubbers, that, from the ſtrings which extend from them, emit a light like the blaze of a candle, while the body continues perfectly dark.

The 3d in the morning, we ſaw a ſeal. Captain Cook has remarked ſeeing ſea weed, when nearly in the ſame place. Our latitude 40° 21′ S, longitude 215° E. Variation of the compaſs 7° 45′ E. Being now well to the eaſtward of the Society Iſlands, I ſteered more to the northward. Friday 3

We continued to have the ſouthern oceanic birds accompany us, and a few whales. The people caught albatroſſes, and fattened them in the ſame manner which they had done when off Cape Horn. Some of theſe meaſured near eight feet between the tips of the wings, when ſpread.

On Thurſday the 9th, we had the misfortune to loſe one of our ſeamen, James Valentine, who died in the night, of an aſthmatic complaint. This poor man had been one of the moſt robuſt people on board, until our arrival at Adventure Bay, where he firſt complained of ſome ſlight indiſpoſition, for which he was bled, and got better. Some time afterwards, the arm in which he had been bled, became painful and inflamed: the inflammation increaſed, with a hollow cough, and extreme difficulty of breathing, to his death. Thurſday 9

The 13th, in the afternoon, we ſaw two land birds, like what are called ſand-larks. Our latitude at this time was 28° 3′ S, and longitude 223° 26′ E. The next morning we ſaw a tropic bird, and ſome fiſh. The winds were light and variable, with calms, from this time to the 19th, when a Monday 13 Tueſday 14

1788. OCTOBER. breeze ſprung up from the NE, which gradually came round to the eaſtward, and proved to be the trade wind. Our latitude on the 19th, at noon, was 24° 13′ S, longitude 222° 17′ E. Variation of the compaſs 5° 19′ E.

Saturday 25. On the 25th, at half paſt ſeven in the morning, we ſaw the Iſland Maitea, called Oſnaburg by Captain Wallis, who firſt diſcovered it. At noon it bore S W by W ½ W, ſix miles diſtant. Our latitude 17° 50′ S, longitude 212° 24′ E. Variation five degrees eaſt. As Captain Wallis and Captain Cook had both paſſed near the ſouth ſide, I ran along the north ſide, which is remarkably ſteep. The iſland is high and round, and not more than three miles in its greateſt extent. The ſouth ſide, where the declivity from the hill is more gradual, is the chief place of reſidence of the natives; but the north ſide, from the very ſummit down to the ſea, is ſo ſteep, that it can afford no ſupport to the inhabitants. We ſteered pretty cloſe in to the northward of the eaſt end, where we ſaw but few habitations: a very neat houſe on a ſmall eminence, delightfully ſituated in a grove of cocoa-nut-trees, particularly attracted our notice. About twenty of the natives followed us along ſhore, waving and ſhowing large pieces of cloth; but the ſurf on the ſhore was too high to think of having any communication with them. I obſerved a great number of cocoa-nut-trees, but did not ſee one plantain-tree. There were other trees, but of what kind we could not diſtinguiſh: near the eaſt end are two remarkable rocks, and a reef runs off to the eaſtward about half a league.

The latitude of Maitea is 17° 53′ S; and by our time-keeper, its longitude is 1° 24′ E from Point Venus. Variation of the compaſs 5° 36′ E.

We continued our courſe to the weſtward, and at ſix

in the evening ſaw Otaheite, bearing W ½ S; the iſland Maitea, then in ſight, bearing E ½ S, eight leagues diſtant. As there was great probability that we ſhould remain a conſiderable time at Otaheite, it could not be expected that the intercourſe of my people with the natives ſhould be of a very reſerved nature: I therefore ordered that every perſon ſhould be examined by the ſurgeon, and had the ſatisfaction to learn, from his report, that they were all perfectly free from any venereal complaint. 1788. OCTOBER.

On the 26th, at four o'clock in the morning, having run twenty-five leagues from Maitea, we brought to till daylight, when we ſaw Point Venus bearing S W by W, diſtant about four leagues. As we drew near, a great number of canoes came off to us. Their firſt enquiries were, if we were *Tyos*, which ſignifies friends; and whether we came from *Pretanie*, (their pronunciation of Britain), or from Lima: they were no ſooner ſatisfied in this, than they crouded on board in vaſt numbers, notwithſtanding our endeavours to prevent it, as we were working the ſhip in; and in leſs than ten minutes, the deck was ſo full that I could ſcarce find my own people. At nine in the forenoon, we were obliged to anchor in the outer part of Matavai Bay, in thirteen fathoms, being prevented by light variable winds from placing the ſhip in a proper birth. In this ſtation the weſt part of One-tree hill bore S by E ½ E one mile diſtant. Sunday 26.

This paſſage of fifty-two days from Van Diemen's land may be rated as moderate ſailing. We paſſed New Zealand with the ſpring equinox, and the winds, though ſtrong, were at no time violent. To the ſouthward of 40° 0′ S they were variable; between the latitudes of 40 and 33° S, the wind kept in the N W quarter; afterwards, till we got into the trade, the winds were variable, moſtly from the

1788. OCTOBER. eaſtward, but light, and inclinable to calms. The ſhip was 3° 22′ in longitude to the eaſtward of the dead reckoning, which the time-keeper almoſt invariably proved to be owing to a current giving us more eaſting than the log. Our track was as diſtant from any courſe of former ſhips as I could conveniently make it; and though we made no new diſcoveries, except the ſmall cluſter of iſlands near New Zealand, yet in other parts of the track, as has been noticed, we met with ſigns of being in the neighbourhood of land.

It may not be unworthy of remark, that the whole diſtance which the ſhip had run by the log, in direct and contrary courſes, from leaving England to our anchoring at Otaheite, was twenty-ſeven thouſand and eighty-ſix miles, which, on an average, is at the rate of an hundred and eight miles each twenty-four hours.

CHAP. VI.

Account of an Engliſh ſhip lately ſailed from Otaheite.—Death of Omai.—Captain Cook's picture ſent on board.—Otoo viſits the ſhip.—His viſit returned.—Natives well diſpoſed towards us.—Account of the cattle left by Captain Cook.—Bread-fruit plants promiſed.—Viſit to the Earee Rahie.—Preſents made to the Arreoys.

THE ſhip being anchored, our number of viſitors continued to increaſe; but as yet we ſaw no perſon that we could recollect to have been of much conſequence. Some inferior chiefs made me preſents of a few hogs, and I made them preſents in return. We were ſupplied with cocoa-nuts in great abundance, but bread-fruit was ſcarce. 1788. OCTOBER. Sunday 26.

Many enquiries were made after Captain Cook, Sir Joſeph Banks, and many of their former friends. They ſaid a ſhip had been here, from which they had learnt that Captain Cook was dead; but the circumſtances of his death they did not appear to be acquainted with; and I had given particular directions to my officers and ſhip's company, that they ſhould not be mentioned. The ſhip ſpoken of, they informed me, ſtaid at Otaheite one month, and had been gone four months, by ſome of their accounts; according to others, only three months. The captain they called Tonah. I underſtood likewiſe from them, that

1788. OCTOBER. that Lieutenant Watts was in the ſhip; who, having been here in the Reſolution with Captain Cook, was well known to them.—One of my firſt enquiries, as will naturally be imagined, was after our friend Omai; and it was a ſenſible mortification and diſappointment to me to hear that not only Omai, but both the New Zealand boys who had been left with him, were dead. Every one agreed in their information that they died a natural death. Otoo, who was the chief of Matavai when Captain Cook was here the laſt time, was abſent at another part of the iſland; they told me meſſengers were ſent to inform him of our arrival, and that he was expected to return ſoon. There appeared among the natives in general great good-will towards us, and they ſeemed to be much rejoiced at our arrival. This whole day we experienced no inſtance of diſhoneſty. We were ſo much crouded, that I could not undertake to remove to a more proper ſtation, without danger of diſobliging our viſitors, by deſiring them to leave the ſhip: this buſineſs was, therefore, deferred till the next morning.

Monday 27. Early in the morning, before the natives began to flock off to us, we weighed anchor, to work farther into the bay, and moored at about a quarter of a mile diſtance from the ſhore; Point Venus bearing N 16° E; the weſt part of One-tree-hill S W by S; and the point of the reef N 37° W; the ſhip lying in ſeven fathoms water.

Several chiefs now came on board, and expreſſed great pleaſure at ſeeing me. Among theſe were Otow, the father of Otoo, and Oreepyah, his brother; alſo another chief of Matavai, called Poeeno: and to theſe men I made preſents. Two meſſengers likewiſe arrived from Otoo, to acquaint me of his being on his way to the ſhip; each of whom

whom brought me, as a preſent from Otoo, a ſmall pig, and a young plantain-tree, as a token of friendſhip. The ſhip was now plentifully ſupplied with proviſions; every perſon having as much as he could conſume. 1788. OCTOBER.

As ſoon as the ſhip was ſecured, I went on ſhore with the chief Poeeno, and accompanied by a multitude of the natives. He conducted me to the place where we had fixed our tents in 1777, and deſired that I would now appropriate the ſpot to the ſame uſe. We then went acroſs the beach, and through a walk delightfully ſhaded with bread-fruit trees, to his own houſe. Here we found two women at work ſtaining a piece of cloth red. Theſe I found were his wife and her ſiſter. They deſired me to ſit down on a mat, which was ſpread for the purpoſe, and with great kindneſs offered me refreſhments. I received the congratulations of ſeveral ſtrangers, who came to us and behaved with great decorum and attention. The people, however, thronged about the houſe, in ſuch numbers, that I was much incommoded by the heat, which being obſerved, they immediately drew back. Among the croud I ſaw a man who had loſt his arm juſt above the elbow; the ſtump was well covered, and the cure ſeemed as perfect as could be expected from the greateſt profeſſional ſkill.

I made enquiries about the cattle that had been left here by Captain Cook, but the accounts I received were very unfavourable, and ſo various, that, for the preſent, I ſhall forbear ſpeaking of them. After ſtaying about an hour, I got up to take leave, when the women, in a very obliging manner, came to me with a mat, and a piece of their fineſt cloth, which they put on me after the Otaheite faſhion. When I was thus dreſt, they each of them took one of my hands,

1788. OCTOBER. hands, and accompanied me to the water-ſide, and at parting promiſed that they would ſoon return my viſit.

In this walk, I had the ſatisfaction to ſee, that the iſland had received ſome benefit from our former viſits. Two ſhaddocks were brought to me, a fruit which they had not, till we introduced it. And among the articles which they brought off to the ſhip, and offered for ſale, were capſicoms, pumkins, and two young goats.

On my return to the ſhip, I found that a ſmall diſturbance had been occaſioned by one of the natives making an attempt to ſteal a tin pot; which, on being known to Oreepyah, he flew into a violent rage, and it was with ſome difficulty that the thief eſcaped with his life. He drove all his countrymen out of the ſhip; and when he ſaw me, he deſired, if at any time I found a thief, that I would order him to be tied up and puniſhed with a ſevere flogging.

This forenoon, a man came on board with Captain Cook's picture, which had been drawn by Mr. Webber, in 1777, and left with Otoo. It was brought to me to be repaired. The frame was broken, but the picture no way damaged, except a little in the back ground. They called it *Toote* (which has always been their manner of pronouncing Captain Cook's name) *Earee no Otaheite*, chief of Otaheite. They ſaid Toote had deſired Otoo, whenever any Engliſh ſhip came, to ſhow the picture, and it would be acknowledged as a token of friendſhip. The youngeſt brother of Otoo, named Whydooah, viſited me this afternoon: he appeared ſtupified with drinking Ava. At ſunſet all our male viſitors left the ſhip.

Tueſday 28. The next morning early, I received a meſſage from Otoo, to inform me of his arrival, and requeſting that I would ſend a boat for him; which I immediately did, with an officer

(Mr.

(Mr. Chriſtian) to conduct him on board. He came with numerous attendants, and expreſſed much ſatisfaction at our meeting. After introducing his wife to me, we joined noſes, the cuſtomary manner of ſaluting, and, to perpetuate our friendſhip, he deſired we ſhould exchange names. I was ſurprized to find, that, inſtead of Otoo, the name by which he formerly went, he was now called Tinah. The name of Otoo, with the title of *Earee Rahie*, I was informed had devolved to his eldeſt ſon, who was yet a minor, as is the cuſtom of the country. The name of Tinah's wife was Iddeah: with her was a woman, dreſſed with a large quantity of cloth, in the form of a hoop, which was taken off and preſented to me, with a large hog, and ſome bread-fruit. I then took my viſitors into the cabin, and after a ſhort time produced my preſents in return. The preſent I made to Tinah (by which name I ſhall hereafter call him) conſiſted of hatchets, ſmall adzes, files, gimblets, ſaws, looking-glaſſes, red feathers, and two ſhirts. To Iddeah I gave ear-rings, necklaces, and beads; but ſhe expreſſed a deſire alſo for iron, and therefore I made the ſame aſſortment for her as I had for her huſband. Much converſation took place among them on the value of the different articles, and they appeared extremely ſatisfied; ſo that they determined to ſpend the day with me, and requeſted I would ſhew them all over the ſhip, and particularly the cabin where I ſlept. This, though I was not fond of doing, I indulged them in; and the conſequence was, as I had apprehended, that they took a fancy to ſo many things, that they got from me nearly as much more as I had before given them. Afterwards, Tinah deſired me to fire ſome of the great guns: this I likewiſe complied with, and, as the ſhot fell into the ſea

1788. OCTOBER.

1788. OCTOBER. at a great diſtance, all the natives expreſſed their ſurprize by loud ſhouts and acclamations.

I had a large company at dinner; for, beſides Tinah and his wife, there was Otow, the father of Tinah, Oreepyah, and Whydooah, two of his brothers, Poeeno, and ſeveral other chiefs. Tinah is a very large man, much above the common ſtature, being not leſs than ſix feet four inches in height, and proportionably ſtout: his age about thirty-five. His wife (Iddeah) I judged to be about twenty-four years of age: ſhe is likewiſe much above the common ſize of the women at Otaheite, and has a very animated and intelligent countenance. Whydooah, the younger brother of Tinah, was highly ſpoken of as a warrior, but had the character of being the greateſt drunkard in the country; and indeed, to judge from the withered appearance of his ſkin, he muſt have uſed the pernicious drink called Ava, to great exceſs. Tinah was fed by one of his attendants, who ſat by him for that purpoſe, this being a particular cuſtom among ſome of the ſuperior chiefs; and I muſt do him the juſtice to ſay, he kept his attendant conſtantly employed: there was indeed little reaſon to complain of want of appetite in any of my gueſts. As the women are not allowed to eat in preſence of the men, Iddeah dined with ſome of her companions, about an hour afterwards, in private, except that her huſband Tinah favoured them with his company, and ſeemed to have entirely forgotten that he had already dined.

Proviſions were brought off to the ſhip in the greateſt plenty; and, to prevent as much as poſſible any thing which might occaſion diſputes, I deſired Mr. Peckover, the gunner, to undertake the management of our traffic with the

natives. Some of the hogs brought to-day weighed 200lb. and we purchaſed ſeveral for ſalting. Goats were likewiſe brought off for ſale, and I bought a ſhe-goat and kid for leſs than would have purchaſed a ſmall hog.—Our friends here expreſſed much diſappointment, that there was no portrait-painter on board; Tinah in particular, who wiſhed to have had pictures of his father and family. 1788. OCTOBER.

An intimacy between the natives, and our people, was already ſo general, that there was ſcarce a man in the ſhip who had not his *tyo* or friend. Tinah continued with me the whole afternoon, in the courſe of which he eat four times of roaſt pork, beſides his dinner. When he left the ſhip, he requeſted I would keep for him all the preſents I had given to him, as he had not, at Matavai, a place ſufficiently ſafe to ſecure them from being ſtolen; I therefore ſhewed him a locker in my cabin for his uſe, and gave him a key to it. This is perhaps not ſo much a proof of his want of power, as of the eſtimation in which they hold European commodities, and which makes more than the common means of ſecurity requiſite to prevent theft.

I had ſent Nelſon and his aſſiſtant to look for plants, and it was no ſmall pleaſure to me to find, by their report, that, according to appearances, the object of my miſſion would probably be accompliſhed with eaſe. I had given directions to every one on board not to make known to the iſlanders the purpoſe of our coming, leſt it might enhance the value of the bread-fruit plants, or occaſion other difficulties. Perhaps ſo much caution was not neceſſary, but at all events I wiſhed to reſerve to myſelf the time and manner of communication. Nelſon met with two fine ſhaddock-trees, which he had planted in 1777: they were full of fruit, but not ripe

1788. OCTOBER. Wedneſday 29.

In the morning I returned Tinah's viſit, for I found he expected it. He was in a ſmall ſhed about a quarter of a mile to the eaſtward of Matavai point, with his wife and three children, not their own, but who they ſaid were relations. In my walk I had picked up a numerous attendance, for every one I met followed me; ſo that I had collected ſuch a croud, that the heat was ſcarce bearable, every one endeavouring to get a look to ſatisfy their curioſity: they however carefully avoided preſſing againſt me, and welcomed me with chearful countenances, and great good-nature.

I made Tinah underſtand, that my viſit was particularly to him, and gave him a ſecond preſent, equal to the firſt, which he received with great pleaſure; and to the people of conſequence, that were about him, I alſo preſented ſome article or other. There were great numbers of children; and, as I took notice of the little ones that were in arms and gave them beads; both ſmall and great, but with much drollery and good-humour, endeavoured to benefit by the occaſion. Boys of ten and twelve years old were caught up in arms and brought to me, which created much laughter; ſo that in a ſhort time I got rid of all I had brought on ſhore.

In my return I called on Poeeno, and an elderly chief, a relation of his, called Moannah, the principal men of this diſtrict, and with whom I judged it my intereſt to be on good terms. I gave them ſeveral valuable articles; and, as the ſituation here was eligible for a garden, I planted melon, cucumber, and ſallad-ſeeds. I told them many other things ſhould be ſown for their uſe; and they appeared much pleaſed when they underſtood I intended to plant ſuch things as would grow to be trees and produce fruit. I

ſaw

ſaw large patches of tobacco growing without culture, and many pumpkin vines.—The bread-fruit trees and cocoa-nut trees at this time were full of fruit. 1788. OCTOBER.

I went on board to dinner, and Moannah accompanied me. In the afternoon I returned to Poeeno's, with ſome additional ſeeds to improve the little garden I had began to make in the forenoon. While I was giving directions, I received a meſſage from Tinah, inviting me to come to him at his brother Oreepyah's houſe, which was near the beach. At this place I found a great number of people collected, who, on my appearance, immediately made way for me to ſit down by Tinah. The croud being ordered to draw back, a piece of cloth, about two yards wide and forty-one yards in length, was ſpread on the ground; and another piece of cloth was brought by Oreepyah, which he put over my ſhoulders, and round my waiſt, in the manner the chiefs are clothed. Two large hogs, weighing each above two hundred pounds, and a quantity of baked bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, were then laid before me, as a preſent, and I was deſired to walk from one end of the cloth ſpread on the ground to the other, in the courſe of which, Tyo and Ehoah * were repeated with loud acclamations. This ceremony being ended, Tinah deſired I would ſend the things on board, which completely loaded the boat; we, therefore, waited till ſhe came back, and then I took them on board with me; for I knew they expected ſome return.—The preſent which I made on this occaſion, was equal to any that I had made before; but I diſcovered that Tinah was not the ſole proprietor of what he had given to me, for the preſent I gave was divided among thoſe who, I gueſſed,

* *Tyo* and *Ehoah* are words of the ſame ſignification; i. e. *friend*.

had

1788. OCTOBER. had contributed to ſupport his dignity; among whom were Moannah, Poeenah, and Oreepyah; Tinah, however, kept the greateſt part of what I had given, and every one ſeemed ſatisfied with the proportion he allotted them.

The Otaheite breed of hogs ſeems to be ſupplanted by the European. Originally they were of the China ſort, ſhort, and very thick-necked; but the ſuperior ſize of the European have made them encourage our breed.

*Thurſday 30. At break of day, Tinah and his wife came again to the ſhip, and, as their attendants were numerous, I provided a breakfaſt for them of broiled and roaſted pork, which they preferred to tea. Our arrival being known all over the iſland, we had this day a great number of ſtrangers on board, who came from the moſt remote parts, and in the forenoon ſome hooks and thimbles were cut out from the blocks. This induced me to order all the natives out of the ſhip, except the chiefs and their attendants. In executing theſe orders, a daring fellow attacked the centinel, but eſcaped among the croud. Every one knew the conſequence of offending the centinel, and were exceedingly alarmed at the appearance of anger I thought neceſſary to aſſume.

Among thoſe who viſited us to-day, were two chiefs of great conſequence, Marremarre and his ſon Poohaitaiah Otee, Earees of the diſtricts of Itteeah and Attahooroo. Otee was fed at dinner in the ſame manner as Tinah. It was evident that the attention which I ſhewed to theſe chiefs ſeemed to give uneaſineſs to Tinah. At ſun-ſet my viſitors took leave, and were carried on ſhore by one of the ſhip's boats, which has always been regarded as a mark of diſtinction, and, on that account, preferred by them to going in their own canoes. At their requeſt, a race was rowed between our five-oared cutter and one of their double

double canoes with four paddles. Great exertions were uſed on both ſides, but the cutter firſt reached the ſhore. In their return to the ſhip, Oreepyah ſtopped them, till a large piece of cloth, that he had ſent for, was brought; which he tied to the boat-hook, and deſired ſhould be carried off as a trophy of their victory. 1788. OCTOBER.

The next morning, at ſun-riſe, Moannah came on board with a meſſage from Tinah, to acquaint me that he was *mattow* (afraid to ſee me) till he had recovered ſome things that had been ſtolen from the ſhip, and which he had ſent after. I knew there was ſomething wrong, as no canoes came off to us, and, on looking about, we found the buoy of the beſt bower anchor had been taken away, I imagine, for the ſake of ſome iron hoops that were on it. That this might not create any coolneſs, I ſent a boat to Tinah, to invite him and his friends to come on board; which they immediately did, and were no longer under any apprehenſions. I had made an appointment with Oreepyah, for him to go with me to Oparre this morning; but the accident juſt mentioned cauſed him to break his engagement, he having gone, I was informed, in ſearch of what had been ſtolen. Friday 31.

Oparre is the diſtrict next to the weſtward of Matavai. One of my reaſons for going to Oparre, was to ſee if Nelſon would be able to procure plants there; but I gave the credit of my viſit to young Otoo, the ſon of Tinah, who was the Earee Rahie, and lived with the reſt of Tinah's children at Oparre. I prepared a magnificent preſent for this youth, who was repreſented to me as the perſon of the greateſt conſequence, or rather of the higheſt rank, in the iſland. At noon I left the ſhip, accompanied by Tinah, his wife Iddeah, and Poeeno. Moannah was to have

1788. OCTOBER. have been of the party, but he inſiſted on remaining in the ſhip, to prevent his countrymen from attempting to ſteal any thing.

After half an hour's ſailing, we arrived at Oparre. During this time, Tinah gave me a more circumſtantial account of the cattle and ſheep, that had been left with him: he related, that after five years from the time of Captain Cook's departure (counting 63 moons) the people of the Iſland Eimeo joined with thoſe of Attahooroo, a diſtrict of Otaheite, and made a deſcent on Oparre: that after ſome reſiſtance, by which many men were killed, Tinah and his people fled to the mountains, leaving all their property to the mercy of the victorious party, who deſtroyed almoſt every thing which they found not convenient to take away with them. Some of the cattle were killed and eaten, but the greater part were taken to Eimeo. The cows, he ſaid, had produced eight calves, and the ewes ten young ones. The ducks, among which they claſſed the geeſe, had greatly increaſed; but the turkeys and peacocks, whatever was the cauſe, had not bred. It ſeemed to give Tinah great pleaſure to obſerve how much I was concerned for the deſtruction of ſo many uſeful animals; but the cauſe of his ſatisfaction, I found, did not proceed from any expectation that I ſhould replace them, but from the belief that I would take vengeance on the people who had deprived him of them; for with reſpect to the loſs of the cattle, he appeared ſo unconcerned and indifferent, that I was very angry with him. There is, however, ſufficient excuſe for his reſentment againſt the people of Eimeo; for the large extenſive houſes, which we had ſeen in this part of Otaheite, in the year 1777, were all deſtroyed, and at preſent they had no other habitations than light ſheds,

which might be taken by the four corners, and removed by four men; and of the many large canoes which they then had, not more than three remained. Tinah, underſtanding from my converſation, that I intended viſiting ſome of the other iſlands in this neighbourhood, very earneſtly deſired I would not think of leaving Matavai. "Here," ſaid he, "you ſhall be ſupplied plentifully with "every thing you want. All here are your friends, and "friends of King George: if you go to the other iſlands, "you will have every thing ſtolen from you." I replied, that, on account of their good-will, and from a deſire to ſerve him and his country, King George had ſent out thoſe valuable preſents to him; "and will not you, Tinah, "ſend ſomething to King George in return?"—"Yes," he ſaid, "I will ſend him any thing I have;" and then began to enumerate the different articles in his power, among which he mentioned the bread-fruit. This was the exact point to which I wiſhed to bring the converſation; and, ſeizing an opportunity, which had every appearance of being undeſigned and accidental, I told him the bread-fruit-trees were what King George would like; upon which he promiſed me a great many ſhould be put on board, and ſeemed much delighted to find it ſo eaſily in his power to ſend any thing that would be well received by King George. 1788. OCTOBER.

On landing at Oparre, an immenſe croud of natives, as uſual, immediately thronged about us. I enquired for Oreepyah, whom I expected to have met me here, but he was not yet returned from his ſearch after the thieves; we therefore went under a ſhed of his to wait for him, and in about a quarter of an hour he joined us, bringing with him an iron ſcraper, and one of the hoops of the buoy. I thanked him for the trouble which he had

1788. OCTOBER. taken, and aſſured him that I was perfectly ſatisfied; for he ſtill ſeemed apprehenſive of my diſpleaſure.

We took leave for a ſhort time of Oreepyah, and I proceeded with Tinah to make my viſit to the young Otoo, the *Earee Rahie*. When we had walked about five minutes, Tinah ſtopped, and informed me that no perſon could be permitted to ſee his ſon, who was covered above the ſhoulders. He then took off his upper garments, and requeſted I would do the ſame. I replied, that I had no objection to go as I would to my own king, who was the greateſt in all the world; and, pulling off my hat, he threw a piece of cloth round my ſhoulders, and we went on. About a quarter of a mile farther towards the hills, through a delightful ſhade of bread-fruit trees, we ſtopped at the ſide of a ſmall ſerpentine river: here I was in view of a houſe on the other ſide, at about fifty yards diſtance. From this houſe the young king was brought out on a man's ſhoulders, clothed in a piece of fine white cloth, and I was deſired by Tinah to ſalute him by the name of *Too Earee Rahie*. The preſent which I had prepared was divided into three parts, and two other children made their appearance in the ſame manner. The firſt preſent I gave to a meſſenger who attended for that purpoſe; and I was inſtructed by Tinah to ſay, that it was for the *Earee Rahie*; that I was his friend; that I hated thieves; and that I came from Britannia. The ſecond preſent was ſent in the ſame manner, with a ſimilar meſſage, to one of the other children; and likewiſe the third.

As I could not ſee the *Earee Rahie* diſtinctly, I deſired to be permitted to go over the river to him; but this, it ſeems, could not be complied with: therefore, after ſeeing the preſents delivered, I returned with Tinah towards Oreepyah's

Oreepyah's houſe. I was informed that Tinah had four children by his wife, Iddeah. Otoo, or Too, the *Earee Rahie*, appeared to be about ſix years old: the ſecond is a girl, named Terrenah Oroah: the third, a boy, Terreetappanooai; and a fourth, an infant girl, whom I did not ſee, named Tahamydooah. 1788. OCTOBER.

When we came to the place where we had firſt ſtopped, Tinah took the cloth from my ſhoulders, and deſired me to put my hat on; I expreſſed a deſire to ſee more of the place, and he took me back by a different way. On paſſing a trunk of a tree, rudely carved, I was deſired again to pull my hat off, and all uncovered their ſhoulders. This I diſcovered to be nothing more than the boundary of the king's land; on which, whoever ſet their feet, uncovered themſelves out of reſpect.

We ſtopped at a houſe belonging to Tinah, where I was treated with a concert of one drum and three flutes, with ſinging by four men. I made ſome preſents to the performers, and we removed to Oreepyah's houſe, where, after paying my compliments to him, which I found was expected, Tinah made me a preſent of a large hog, and ſome cocoa-nuts. He then introduced an uncle of his, called Mowworoah, a very old man, much tattowed, and almoſt blind. To this chief I made a preſent; and ſoon after I embarked, with Tinah, Oreepyah, their wives, and Poeeno. A vaſt number of people were collected on the beach to ſee us depart; and as ſoon as the boat had put off, Tinah deſired me to fire my pocket piſtol, the *poopooe ete ete*, as he called it: the report ſeemed to electrify the whole croud; but finding no harm done, they gave great ſhouts of approbation.

Nelſon, who accompanied me in this expedition, had

1788. OCTOBER. but little opportunity to ſearch after plants, the natives having crouded ſo much about him: he ſaw enough, however, to aſſure him that they were to be procured here as plentifully as at Matavai.

In our paſſage to the ſhip, which we rowed in one hour, nothing but *Britannie* was enquired after, and of the number of ſhips and guns. When I told them we had ſhips of 100 guns, they could not believe it, till I drew one on paper: they then aſked me if it was not as big as Tarrah, which is a high projecting head-land, half way between Matavai and Oparre, called by us One-tree Hill. Tinah much wiſhed that one of theſe large ſhips ſhould be ſent to Otaheite, and that myſelf ſhould come in her, and bring him a number of things that he wanted; among which he particularly deſired beds and high-backed elbow chairs might not be forgotten: a requeſt perfectly according with the indolent character of Tinah.

NOVEMBER. Saturday 1. As we had occaſion to fix a tent on Point Venus, this morning we moved the ſhip nearer to it, and moored again in ſix fathoms, the point bearing N N E.

Tinah and ſeveral other chiefs dined on board with me. After dinner I went on ſhore with Tinah, and made a viſit to his father, Otow. I likewiſe went to the garden which I had made near Poeeno's houſe, and found every thing had been taken care of. After this, I was invited to an entertainment called *Heiva*, which Tinah had ordered, and which conſiſted of ſinging and dancing by three men and a young girl. When this performance was finiſhed I returned to the ſhip.

Sunday 2. At day-light, I ſent Mr. Chriſtian with a party to erect our tent, and ſoon after followed myſelf with Tinah, Moannah, and Poeeno. With their conſent I fixed a

boundary, within which the natives were not to enter without leave, and the chiefs cautioned them againſt it. 1788. NOVEMBER.

The principal uſe of the tents on ſhore was for a lodgment for the plants; and I had now, inſtead of appearing to receive a favour, brought the chiefs to believe that I was doing them a kindneſs in carrying the plants, as a preſent from them to the *Earee Rahie no Britanee*. The party at the tent conſiſted of nine perſons, including Nelſon and his aſſiſtant.

Tinah dined with me on board, and was to-day my only viſitor: nevertheleſs, the ceremony of being fed he ſo ſcrupulouſly obſerved, that, even after all the attendants were ſent away, and we were left by ourſelves, I was obliged to lift the wine to his mouth. The wives of the *Earees* are ſometimes ſubject to this reſtriction after the birth of a child, but are releaſed after a certain time, on performing a ceremony called *Oammo*.

After dinner, Tinah invited me to accompany him with a preſent of proviſions to a party of the Arreoys, a ſociety deſcribed in the accounts of the former voyages: in this ceremony, he made me the principal perſon. Our way to the place where the offering was to be made, was by the ſide of a river, along the banks of which I had always walked before this time; but on the preſent occaſion a canoe was provided for me, and dragged by eight men. On arriving at the landing-place, I ſaw a large quantity of bread-fruit, with ſome hogs ready dreſſed, and a quantity of cloth. At about forty yards diſtant ſat a man, who, I was informed, was a principal *Arreoy*. A lane being made by the croud, he was addreſſed by one of Tinah's people, ſtanding on the canoe, in a ſpeech compoſed of ſhort ſentences, which laſted about a quarter of an hour. During this,

1788. NOVEMBER.

this, a piece of cloth was produced, one end of which I was desired to hold, and five men, one with a sucking pig, and the others having each a basket of bread-fruit, prepared to follow me. In this order we advanced to the *Arreoy*, and laid the whole down before him. I then spoke several sentences dictated to me by Tinah, the meaning of which I did not understand; and, my pronunciation not being very exact, caused a great deal of mirth. This speech being finished, I was shewn another *Arreoy*, who had come from Ulietea, and to him likewise I was required to deliver an oration. Tinah understanding from me, that I had children in my own country, he desired me to make one more offering on their account. There still remained three baskets of bread-fruit, a small pig, and another piece of cloth: with these, assisted as before, I made the offering in favour of my children to the man whom I had first addressed. He made no reply to all my fine speeches, but sat with great gravity, and received every thing as a matter of right, and not of courtesy.

All that I could make out of this strange ceremony was, that the *Arreoys* are highly respected, and that the society is chiefly composed of men distinguished by their valour or some other merit, and that great trust and confidence is reposed in them; but I could not comprehend what this had to do with my children, or why it should be imagined that an offering made on their account to a society of men, who destroy all their children, should be propitious. I learnt from Tinah, in talking about his children, that his first-born child was killed as soon as it came into the world, he being then an *Arreoy*; but before his second child was born, he quitted the society. The *Arreoys* are allowed great latitude in their amours, except in times of

danger. Then, as they are almoſt all fighting men *(tata toa)* they are reſtricted, that they may not weaken or enervate themſelves. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Theſe ceremonies being ended, I returned to the ſhip.

Such of the natives, as I converſed with about the inſtitution of ſo extraordinary a ſociety as the *Arreoy*, aſſerted that it was neceſſary, to prevent an over population. *Worrow worrow no te mydidde, worrow worrow te tata.* We have too many children, and too many men, was their conſtant excuſe. Yet it does not appear, that they are apprehenſive of too great an increaſe of the lower claſs of people, none of them being ever admitted into the *Arreoy* ſociety. The moſt remarkable inſtance, related to me, of the barbarity of this inſtitution, was of Teppahoo, the Earee of the diſtrict of Tettaha, and his wife, Tetteehowdeeah, who is ſiſter to Otow, and conſidered as a perſon of the firſt conſequence. I was told that they have had eight children, every one of which was deſtroyed as ſoon as born. That any human beings were ever ſo devoid of natural affection, as not to wiſh to preſerve alive one of ſo many children, is not credible. It is more reaſonable to conclude, that the death of theſe infants was not an act of choice in the parents; but that they were ſacrificed in compliance with ſome barbarous ſuperſtition, with which we are unacquainted. What ſtrengthens this conjecture is, that they have adopted a nephew as their heir, of whom they are exceſſively fond.

In countries ſo limited as the iſlands in the South Seas, the natives of which, before they were diſcovered by European navigators, probably had not an idea of the exiſtence of other lands, it is not unnatural that an increaſing population ſhould occaſion apprehenſions of univerſal diſtreſs.

Orders

1788. NOVEMBER. Orders of celibacy, which have proved ſo prejudicial in other countries, might perhaps in this have been beneficial; ſo far at leaſt as to have anſwered their purpoſe by means not criminal. The number of inhabitants at Otaheite have been eſtimated at above one hundred thouſand. The iſland, however, is not cultivated to the greateſt advantage: yet, were they continually to improve in huſbandry, their improvement could not, for a length of time, keep pace with an unlimited population.

An idea here preſents itſelf, which, however fanciful it may appear at firſt ſight, ſeems to merit ſome attention:—While we ſee among theſe iſlands ſo great a waſte of the human ſpecies, that numbers are born only to die; and, at the ſame time, a large continent ſo near to them as New Holland, in which there is ſo great a waſte of land uncultivated, and almoſt deſtitute of inhabitants; it naturally occurs, how greatly the two countries might be made to benefit each other; and gives occaſion to regret that the iſlanders are not inſtructed in the means of emigrating to New Holland, which ſeems as if deſigned by nature to ſerve as an aſylum for the ſuperflux of inhabitants in the iſlands. Such a plan of emigration, if rendered practicable to them, might not only be the means of aboliſhing the horrid cuſtom of deſtroying children, as it would remove the plea of neceſſity, but might lead to other important purpoſes. A great continent would be converted from a deſert to a populous country; a number of our fellow-creatures would be ſaved; the inhabitants of the iſlands would become more civilized; and it is not improbable, but that our colonies in New Holland would derive ſo much benefit as to more than repay any trouble or expence,

pence, that might be incurred in endeavouring to promote so humane a plan. 1788. NOVEMBER.

The latter, however, is a remote consideration, for the intertropical parts of New Holland, are those most suited to the habits and manner of living of the islanders; and likewise the soil and climate are the best adapted to their modes of agriculture. Man placed by his Creator in the warm climates, perhaps, would never emigrate into the colder, unless under the tyrannous influence of necessity; and ages might elapse before the new inhabitants would spread to our settlers, though they are but barely within the limits of frost, that great cause of nine tenths of the necessities of Europeans. Nevertheless, besides forwarding the purposes of humanity and general convenience, in bringing a people without land to a land without people, the benefit of a mutual intercourse with a neighbouring and friendly colony, would in itself be no inconsiderable advantage.

Among people so free from ostentation as the Otaheiteans, and whose manners are so simple and natural, the strictness with which the punctilios of rank are observed, is surprising. I know not if any action, however meritorious, can elevate a man above the class in which he was born, unless he were to acquire sufficient power to confer dignity on himself. If any woman of the inferior classes has a child by an Earee, it is not suffered to live. Perhaps the offspring of Teppahoo and Tetteehowdeeah were destined to satisfy some cruel adjustment of rank and precedency.

CHAP. VII.

A Theft committed.—Deception of the painted Head.—Converſation with a Prieſt.—A Wreſtling Match.—Reports of the Natives concerning other Iſlands.—Some Account of Omai.

1788. NOVEMBER. Monday 3.

THE trade for proviſions I directed to be carried on at the tent by Mr. Peckover, the gunner. Moannah likewiſe reſided there, as a guard over his countrymen; but though it appeared to be the wiſh of all the chiefs, that we ſhould remain unmoleſted, it was not poſſible entirely to prevent them from pilfering.

My table at dinner was generally crouded. Tinah, Oreepyah, Poeeno, and Moannah, were my regular gueſts, and I was ſeldom without ſome chiefs from other diſtricts. Almoſt every individual of any conſequence has ſeveral names, which makes it frequently perplexing, when the ſame perſon is ſpoken of, to know who is meant. Every chief has perhaps a dozen or more names in the courſe of thirty years; ſo that the perſon who has been ſpoken of by one viſitor, will not perhaps be known to another, unleſs other circumſtances lead to a diſcovery. The father of Tinah, at this time called Otow, was known in 1769 by the name of Whappai.

I ſhowed Tinah the preparations I was making to take on board the bread-fruit plants, which pleaſed him exceedingly, but he did not forget to remind me, that when the

next ſhip came out he hoped King George would ſend him large axes, files, ſaws, cloth of all kinds, hats, chairs, and bedſteads, with arms, ammunition, and in ſhort every thing he could think of mentioning. 1788. NOVEMBER.

This afternoon, the gudgeon of the rudder belonging to the large cutter, was drawn out and ſtolen, without being perceived by the man that was ſtationed to take care of her. Several petty thefts having been committed by the natives, moſtly owing to the negligence of our own people; and as theſe kind of accidents generally created alarm, and had a tendency to interrupt the good terms on which we were with the chiefs, I thought it would have a good effect to puniſh the boat-keeper in their preſence, many of them happening to be then on board; and accordingly I ordered him a dozen laſhes. Tinah, with ſeveral of the chiefs, attended the puniſhment, and interceded very earneſtly to get it mitigated: the women ſhowed great ſympathy, and that degree of feeling which characteriſes the amiable part of their ſex.

The natives brought off to-day two different kinds of roots that grow like yams: one they call Ettee, which is a ſweet root, common alſo to the Friendly Iſlands, and may be eaten as a ſweetmeat: the other they call Appay, a root like the Tyah or Eddie in the Weſt Indies. A fruit called Ayyah, which is the jambo of Batavia, was likewiſe brought off to us: they are as large as middle-ſized apples, very juicy and refreſhing, and may be eaten in large quantities. Alſo ſome Avees, which are the real Otaheite apple; but they were not yet in ſeaſon. Theſe are a delicious high-flavoured fruit, and before they are ripe, anſwer the culinary purpoſes of our apples.

A chief called Tootaha, who came from the iſland Ulie- Tueſday 4.

1788. NOVEMBER. tea, was introduced to me to-day, by Tinah, as one of his particular friends. I was told that he was a prieſt, and a perſon of great knowledge. I deſired Tinah to take what he thought proper as a preſent for him; and I muſt do Tinah the juſtice to ſay, he was more ſparing than I ſhould have been. I likewiſe received a viſit to-day from Oedidee, the man who had been at ſea with Captain Cook in 1773 and 1774, as related in the account of that voyage. He ſtill retained ſome of the Engliſh words which he had learnt in that expedition.

Wedneſday 5. The weather variable, with lightning, and frequent ſhowers of rain. Wind E N E.

This was the firſt day of our beginning to take up plants: we had much pleaſure in collecting them, for the natives offered their aſſiſtance, and perfectly underſtood the method of taking them up and pruning them.

The croud of natives was not ſo great as hitherto it had been: the curioſity of ſtrangers was ſatisfied; and, as the weather began to be unſettled and rainy, they had almoſt all returned to their homes; ſo that only the people of Matavai and Oparre remained with us, except a few chiefs from other iſlands: our ſupplies however were abundant; and what I conſidered as no ſmall addition to our comforts, we ceaſed to be incommoded, when on ſhore, by the natives following us, and could take our walks almoſt unnoticed. In any houſe that we wiſhed to enter, we always experienced a kind reception, and without officiouſneſs. The Otaheiteans have the moſt perfect eaſineſs of manners, equally free from forwardneſs and formality. When they offer refreſhments, if they are not accepted, they do not think of offering them the ſecond time; for they have not the leaſt idea of that ceremonious kind of refuſal which

which expects a ſecond invitation. In like manner, at taking leave, we were never troubled with ſolicitations to prolong our viſit, but went without ceremony, except making uſe of a farewell expreſſion at parting. Another advantage, ſeldom found in warm countries, was, in this part of Otaheite being free from muſkitoes, though, at particular times of the year, the inhabitants are peſtered with great numbers of flies. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Moannah continued our conſtant friend at the tent, and, with Tinah and all his friends, dined with me every day.

The ſhip's barber had brought with him from London, a painted head, ſuch as the hair-dreſſers have in their ſhops, to ſhew the different faſhions of dreſſing hair; and it being made with regular features, and well coloured, I deſired him to dreſs it, which he did with much neatneſs, and with a ſtick, and a quantity of cloth, he formed a body. It was then reported to the natives that we had an Engliſh woman on board, and the quarter-deck was cleared of the croud, that ſhe might make her appearance. Being handed up the ladder, and carried to the after-part of the deck, there was a general ſhout of "*Huaheine no Brittanne myty.*" Huaheine ſignifies woman, and myty, good. Many of them thought it was living, and aſked if it was my wife. One old woman ran with preſents of cloth and bread-fruit, and laid them at her feet; at laſt they found out the cheat; but continued all delighted with it, except the old lady, who felt herſelf mortified, and took back her preſents, for which ſhe was laughed at exceedingly. Tinah and all the chiefs enjoyed the joke, and, after making many enquiries about the Britiſh women, they ſtrictly enjoined me, when I came again, to bring a ſhip full of them.

Some very fine ſugar-cane was brought to me; each of the

1788. NOVEMBER. the pieces was ſix inches round. I had before told Tinah that our ſugar was made of it, and he was very deſirous to diſcover the means; for they were ſo fond of our loaf ſugar, that a preſent to any chief would have been incomplete without a piece of it. Another article in great eſtimation, and likewiſe expected to make part of a preſent, was ſciſſars, which they made uſe of to keep their beards in order.

By this time Nelſon had, with aſſiſtance from the ſhip, completed a large garden near the tents; in which were ſown ſeeds of different kinds, that we had collected at the Cape of Good Hope. I likewiſe diſtributed fruit-ſtones and almonds for planting, among the chiefs, who, I hope, will endeavour to make them ſucceed: and, as they are very fond of ſweet-ſmelling flowers, with which the women delight to ornament themſelves, I gave them ſome roſe-ſeed.

Thurſday 6. We had very variable weather, much rain, and ſome weſterly winds; ſo that a conſiderable ſwell ran into the bay, and a number of ſpotted white and black porpuſſes made their appearance.

I had the mortification to ſee that our garden-ground had been much trod over; and, what was worſe, the chiefs appeared but little concerned at it. To this kind of careleſſneſs and indifference I attribute the miſcarriage of many of the plants left here by Captain Cook. I had now in a flouriſhing ſtate, two orange plants, ſome vines, a fig-tree, and two pine-apple plants, which I gave to Poeeno, whoſe reſidence is a place favourable for their growth.

We got on ſucceſsfully with our plants, having a hundred potted at the tent, and in a fair way of doing well.

The

The cabin alſo was completed, and ready to receive them on board. 1788. NOVEMBER.

I have before remarked, that my friend Tinah was rather of a ſelfiſh diſpoſition, and this afternoon he ſhowed a ſtronger inſtance of it than I was witneſs to at any time before or after. His brother Oreepyah ſent on board to me, a preſent of a large hog, and a quantity of bread-fruit: but theſe kind of preſents are much more expenſive than purchaſing at the market. Soon after Oreepyah himſelf came on board. Tinah was with me at the time, and whiſpered me to tell Oreepyah not to bring any more hogs or fruit, and to take thoſe back which he had ſent. This advice, as may be ſuppoſed, did not produce the effect intended. Oreepyah appears to be a man of great ſpirit, and is highly reſpected by his countrymen. Among other viſitors to-day, was one of the men who had been to Lima in 1776.

Our plants had now encreaſed to 252: as they were all kept on ſhore at the tent, I augmented the guard there, though, from the general conduct of the natives, there did not appear the leaſt occaſion for ſo much caution. Saturday 8.

While I was at dinner, Tinah deſired I would permit a man to come down into the cabin, whom he called his *Taowah*, or prieſt; for I was obliged to keep a centinel at the hatchway to prevent being incommoded at my meals with too much company; a reſtriction which pleaſed the chiefs, who always aſked leave for any particular perſon to be admitted of whom they wiſhed me to take notice. The company of the prieſt brought on a religious converſation. He ſaid, their great God was called Oro; and that they had many others of leſs conſequence. He aſked me if I had a God?—if he had a ſon? and who was his wife? I told them he had a ſon,

1788. NOVEMBER. a ſon, but no wife. Who was his father and mother? was the next queſtion. I ſaid, he never had father or mother; at this they laughed exceedingly. You have a God then who never had a father or mother, and has a child without a wife! Many other queſtions were aſked, which my little knowledge of the language did not enable me to anſwer.

The weather was now fine again, and a great number of people were come from other parts of the iſland. Tinah informed me that there was to be a *heiva* and a wreſtling-match on ſhore, and that the performers waited for our attendance; we therefore ſet off, with ſeveral of our friends, and, about a quarter of a mile from the tents, we found a great concourſe of people formed into a ring. As ſoon as we were ſeated, a dancing heiva began, which was performed by two girls and four men: this laſted half an hour, and conſiſted of wanton geſtures and motions, ſuch as have been deſcribed in the account of former voyages. When the dance ended, Tinah ordered a long piece of cloth to be brought; his wife Iddeah, and myſelf, were deſired to hold the two firſt corners, and, the remaining part being ſupported by many others, we carried it to the performers, and gave it them. Several other chiefs made a like preſent or payment. The performers were ſtrollers, that travelled about the country as in Europe.

After this, the wreſtling began, and the place ſoon became a ſcene of riot and confuſion. A party of the Arreoys alſo began to exerciſe a privilege, which it ſeems they are allowed, of taking from the women ſuch of their clothes as they thought worth it; ſo that ſome of them were left little better than naked. One young woman, who was attacked, oppoſed them with all her ſtrength, and held faſt

faſt her cloth, though they almoſt dragged her along the ground. Obſerving that I took notice of her, ſhe held out her hand, and begged my aſſiſtance; and at my requeſt ſhe eſcaped being pillaged. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Soon after, a ring was again made, but the wreſtlers were ſo numerous within it, that it was impoſſible to reſtore order. In the challenges, they lay one hand upon their breaſt, and on the bending of the arm at the elbow, with the other hand, they ſtrike a very ſmart blow, which, as the hand is kept hollow, creates a ſound that may be heard at a conſiderable diſtance; and this they do ſo frequently, and with ſuch force, that the fleſh becomes exceedingly bruiſed, and, the ſkin breaking, bleeds conſiderably. At this time, the ſound from ſo many reſembled that of a number of people in a wood felling trees. This is the general challenge; but when any two combatants agree to a trial, they preſent their hands forward, joining them only by the extremities of the fingers. They begin by watching to take an advantage; at length they cloſe, ſeize each other by the hair, and are moſt commonly parted before either receives a fall. Only one couple performed any thing like the part of good wreſtlers; and, as they were an equal match, this conflict laſted longer than any of the others; but they alſo were parted.

Iddeah was the general umpire, and ſhe managed with ſo much addreſs as to prevent any quarrelling, and there was no murmuring at her deciſions. As her perſon was large, ſhe was very conſpicuous in the circle. Tinah took no part in the management. Upon the whole, this performance gave me a better opinion of their ſtrength than of their ſkill or dexterity.

For ſome time paſt, Tinah had talked of going to the Tueſday 11

1788. NOVEMBER. iſland of Tethuroa, which lies eight or ten leagues north from Otaheite, to fetch his mother; but I found I had only half underſtood him; for this morning he enquired when we were to ſail there in the ſhip: however he ſeemed to feel no great diſappointment at my not complying with his wiſh. Tethuroa, he informed me, is the property of his family. He likewiſe ſpoke to me about an iſland called Roo-opow, the ſituation of which he deſcribed to be to the eaſtward of Otaheite four or five days ſail, and that there were large animals upon it with eight legs. The truth of this account he very ſtrenuouſly inſiſted upon, and wiſhed me to go thither with him. I was at a loſs to know whether or not Tinah himſelf gave credit to this whimſical and fabulous account; for though they have credulity ſufficient to believe any thing, however improbable, they are at the ſame time ſo much addicted to that ſpecies of wit which we call humbug, that it is frequently difficult to diſcover whether they are in jeſt or earneſt. Their ideas of geography are very ſimple: they believe the world to be a fixed plane of great extent; and that the ſun, moon, and ſtars, are all in motion round it. I have been frequently aſked by them, if I have not been as far as the ſun and moon; for they think we are ſuch great travellers, that ſcarce any undertaking is beyond our ability.

Another iſland, called Tappuhoi, ſituated likewiſe to the eaſtward, was deſcribed to me by Tinah, the inhabitants of which were ſaid to be all warriors, and that the people of Otaheite did not dare to go there. He told me, that very lately a canoe from Tappuhoi was at the iſland Maitea; that as ſoon as they landed they began to fight with the people of Maitea, who killed them all, except a young lad, and a woman, who have ſince been at Otaheite. I ſaw the

boy, but could get no information from him. It is moſt probable, that this unfortunate viſit of the canoe from Tappuhoi was not deſigned, but occaſioned by adverſe winds, which forced them ſo far from their own iſland; and that the people of Maitea began the attack, taking advantage of their ſuperior numbers, on account of ſome former quarrel. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Thurſday 13th. I had a large company to dine with me to-day. Some of my conſtant viſitors had obſerved, that we always drank his Majeſty's health, as ſoon as the cloth was removed; but they were by this time become ſo fond of wine, that they would frequently remind me of the health in the middle of dinner, by calling out King George Earee no Brittannee; and would banter me if the glaſs was not filled to the brim. Nothing could exceed the mirth and jollity of theſe people, when they met on board. Thurſday 13.

I was aſſured by Oediddee, and ſeveral others, that the vines planted at the iſland Huaheine by Captain Cook, had ſucceeded and bore fruit; and that ſome of the other plants, both at Huaheine, and at Oaitepeha, a diſtrict on the SE part of Otaheite, had been preſerved, and were in a thriving ſtate. I was likewiſe informed, that there was a bull and a cow alive at Otaheite, but on different parts of the iſland; the former at a place called Itteah, the latter at the diſtrict of Tettaha. All the reſt were taken away or deſtroyed by the people of Eimeo. As Tettaha was at no great diſtance, I determined to go thither myſelf, the firſt opportunity, and make enquiries, in hopes that the breed might ſtill be preſerved.

I had much diſcourſe with my gueſts about Omai: they confirmed to me, that he died about thirty months after Captain Cook left the iſlands. Soon after Captain Cook's

1788. NOVEMBER. departure from Huaheine, there were ſome diſputes between the people of that iſland and thoſe of Ulietea, in which alſo the natives of Bolabola took a part. Omai, who was become of conſequence from the poſſeſſing three or four muſkets, and ſome ammunition, was conſulted on the occaſion. Such was his opinion and aſſurances of ſucceſs, that a war was determined on, and took place immediately.—Victory ſoon followed, through the means of thoſe few arms, and many of the Ulietea and Bolabola men were killed. In this conteſt their flints proved bad, or probably the locks of the muſkets had got out of order: this they remedied by a lighted ſtick, one man preſenting the muſket, and another with the burnt ſtick ſetting fire to the priming; without which contrivance, their arms would have proved uſeleſs. This expedition, it ſeems, conſumed all their ammunition. Peace was ſoon after eſtabliſhed, but I did not underſtand that Omai had increaſed his poſſeſſions or his rank. Nevertheleſs, I have reaſon to conclude, that he was in ſome degree of favour with his countrymen, from the general good character which they give of him. It appears, that he always remembered England with kindneſs; for his accounts to his countrymen have been ſuch as to give them, not only a great idea of our power and conſequence, but of our friendſhip and good-will towards him.

Tyvarooah, the eldeſt of the New Zealand boys that were left with him, died a ſhort time after Omai: about Coah, the youngeſt, I had always doubtful accounts till I came to Huaheine, where I learnt that he likewiſe was dead.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Expedition to Tettaha after a Heifer.—Extraordinary domeſtic Arrangements.—Tinah's Mother viſits the Ship.—A Sheep brought from Ulietea.—Heavy Storm.—Death of the Surgeon.—Taowne and Toahroah Harbours examined.

AFTER dinner, I went on ſhore, and while I was at the tents, from having expoſed myſelf too much in the ſun, I was taken ill, and continued in much pain for near an hour. This was ſoon known among the natives, and I was exceedingly ſurpriſed to ſee Tinah, and all the principal people, both men and women, collecting round me, and offering their aſſiſtance. For this ſhort illneſs, I was made ample amends, by the pleaſure I received from the attention and appearance of affection in theſe kind people. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Friday 14th.—This morning I had numberleſs enquiries after my health. The weather being fine, I invited Tinah, Oreepyah, and Poeeno, to accompany me to Tettaha, in order to enquire after the cow; and ſoon after ſun-riſe we ſet off in the launch. Tettaha is nearly four leagues from Point Venus. On our arrival, Tinah ſent a man to give notice of our viſit. The chief of the diſtrict, whoſe name was Teppahoo, did not appear, but ſent a meſſenger to demand, if I came only to ſee the cow, or to take it away with me. In anſwer to this, I ſent aſſurances, that I only deſired to ſee it; and the chiefs who were with Friday 14.

1788. NOVEMBER. with me ſpoke to the ſame effect. I was then deſired to proceed in the boat farther along ſhore to the weſtward. In our way Tinah made me ſtop among ſome fiſhing canoes to purchaſe fiſh for him, which he eat raw, with ſalt water for ſauce. When we arrived at the landing place, a great number of people had collected, and ſoon after Teppahoo arrived. Oreepyah and I went with him about a quarter of a mile, when I was ſhown one of the moſt beautiful heifers I ever ſaw. I aſked if they had any more, but they all ſaid there was no other than a bull at Itteah, as before-mentioned. I could not refrain from expreſſing my diſpleaſure at the deſtruction, and the fooliſh ſeparation of theſe fine animals. I had ſhared with Captain Cook in the trouble of this buſineſs, and had been equally anxious for the ſucceſs.

The diſtrict of Tettaha is not ſo luxuriant and fruitful as the country about Matavai. As I ſaw nothing of conſequence to detain me, I made a preſent to Teppahoo, and, after inviting him to viſit me on board the ſhip, which he promiſed to do, I took leave. Tinah had remained all this time in the boat. I obſerved that no reſpect was ſhewn to him at this place, nor was he able to procure a cocoa-nut, or a bread-fruit, otherwiſe than by purchaſing it. The heifer being here, is a proof of this diſtrict not having been friendly to the people of Matavai and Oparre.

In our way back, having to row againſt the wind, we ſtopped to refreſh at Oparre, and it was eight o'clock by the time we arrived at the ſhip. I kept my fellow-travellers on board to ſupper, and they did not fail to remind me of the king's health.

Monday 17. Our collection of bread-fruit plants at the tents, continued increaſing. This morning I ſent twelve on board, in

in pots, to diſcover where they would thrive the beſt, the air being more temperate on board the ſhip than on ſhore. While I was abſent from the ſhip, Teppahoo had been on board, and left a hog as a preſent for me. 1788. NOVEMBER.

After dinner to-day, Tinah, who was my conſtant viſitor, left the table ſooner than uſual. When he was gone, Oreepyah, his brother, and Oedidde, told me a piece of ſcandal, which had been before hinted to me, but which till now I had not heard of with certainty: this was, that Iddeah, Tinah's wife, kept a gallant, who was a *towtow*, or ſervant, and the very perſon who always fed Tinah at dinner: and this was ſo far from being without Tinah's knowledge or conſent, that they ſaid it was by his deſire. They added many other circumſtances, and, as I appeared to doubt, they took ſeveral opportunities, in the courſe of the day, of mentioning it to other people, who all declared it was true.

Tueſday 18th. This afternoon, I ſaw Teppahoo, and invited him on board: before we parted, I bargained with him for the heifer, which he promiſed to bring in five days. My intention was, that if I got the heifer, I would endeavour to purchaſe the bull at Itteah: but if that could not be done, then I could ſend the heifer as a preſent to the poſſeſſor of the bull, which might equally well anſwer my purpoſe. Tueſday 18.

It has been mentioned, that Tinah had a place in my cabin to keep thoſe things which I gave him, as being more ſecure on board than on ſhore. I had remarked lately, that his hoard ſeemed to diminiſh the more I endeavoured to increaſe it: at length I diſcovered that Iddeah kept another hoard in the maſter's cabin, which ſhe regularly enriched from her huſband's, whenever I made him a preſent, apprehending that I ſhould ceaſe giving, when I ſaw Tinah's locker full. At his requeſt, I ſet the carpenters

1788. NOVEMBER. ters to work to make him a cheſt large enough for himſelf and wife to ſleep on. Captain Cook had formerly given him ſuch a cheſt, but it had been taken from him by the Eimeo people.

Friday 21. This forenoon, I received a meſſage from Teppahoo, to acquaint me the heifer was brought to Matavai. I immediately went on ſhore, and found that he had been as good as his word. The purchaſe money was paid, which conſiſted of a ſhirt, a hatchet, a ſpike nail, a knife, a pair of ſciſſars, a gimlet, and file; to which was added, a ſmall quantity of loaf-ſugar. Teppahoo appeared well pleaſed with his bargain; and I ſent the heifer to Poeeno's reſidence, near which was plenty of graſs.

In the afternoon, I was invited to a heiva, the moſt extraordinary part of which was an oration, with ſome ceremonies in compliment to us. Twelve men were divided into four ranks, with two women in the front: behind them all ſtood a prieſt, who made a ſpeech which laſted ten minutes, and which was liſtened to with ſome attention. During this, the picture of Captain Cook, which had been brought for that purpoſe, was placed by my ſide. When the prieſt left off ſpeaking, a piece of white cloth was wrapt round the picture, and another piece round me. The prieſt then ſpoke again for a ſhort time, and an old man placed a piece of plaited cocoa-nut leaf at my feet; the ſame was done to Tinah, and one piece was put under the picture. After this the dancing began, which was in the ſame ſtile that we had already ſeen.

The head of the ſhip was the figure of a woman, and not ill carved. As we were painting the ſhip's upper works, I directed this figure to be painted in colours, with which the iſlanders were much pleaſed. Not only the men

men, but the women, deſired me to bring Engliſh women when I came again. To-day Oedidde, thinking I was not convinced of the truth of what he had told me about Iddeah, mentioned the affair to the lady herſelf in my hearing, at which ſhe laughed, but ſaid he did ill to tell me of it. However, it was evident ſhe was not much offended; for they were both very much diverted in diſcourſing upon the ſubject. 1788. NOVEMBER.

I find it is not at all uncommon for brothers to have connection with the wives of each other, particularly elder brothers with the wives of their younger brothers, which is generally allowed, and no offence taken: but if any perſon, not belonging to the family, endeavours at the ſame intimacy, it is reſented as an injury. Inclination ſeems to be the only binding law of marriage at Otaheite.

As I purpoſed to get inſtruments on ſhore at Point Venus, to make obſervations, I deſired Tinah to order a houſe to be brought there for me; which was done, and fixed in half an hour, being only a light ſhed ſupported by poſts.

To-day I bought a turtle, that was caught on the reefs. As Tinah was going to leave me for a few days, I had it dreſt for his dinner. He told me that his mother, Oberree-roah, was arrived from the iſland Tethuroa, and begged that I would ſend for her in the morning, and take care of her till he returned; which I willingly promiſed. Monday 24.

Tueſday the 25th. This morning, I ſent a boat to Oparre, which returned in the afternoon with Oberree-roah, and two women, her ſervants. As ſhe was old and corpulent, it was with difficulty that we helped her up the ſhip's ſide. As ſoon as ſhe was in the ſhip, ſhe ſat down on the gangway, and, claſping my knees in her arms, expreſſed her pleaſure at ſeeing me by a flood of tears. Her ſervants then produced Tueſday 25.

1788. NOVEMBER. three pieces of cloth, which, with a large hog, ſome bread-fruit, plantains, and cocoa-nuts, ſhe had brought as a preſent. As ſhe was fatigued by her journey, ſhe wiſhed to remain on board all night; and I directed accommodations to be prepared, which was done with little trouble, as nothing more was neceſſary than a mat, and ſome cloth ſpread on the deck. She had with her a favourite cat, bred from one that had been given her by Captain Cook. She told me all the misfortunes that had befallen her ſon and friends, ſince Captain Cook left Otaheite. All the accounts agree in ſome of the cattle being now alive at the iſland Eimeo: in the number they differ; but that there are eight, is the leaſt account. In the morning Oberree-roah being deſirous to go on ſhore, I made her a preſent of ſeveral things, which ſhe did not care to take with her then, but requeſted that I would keep them ſafe for her. Only Moannah and Poeeno dined with me to-day. They told me that Tinah and his brother Oreepyah were not on good terms together; and it was imagined that they would fight as ſoon as the ſhip was gone. I had obſerved a coolneſs between them, and had at times endeavoured to make them more cordial, but with very little effect. Their quarrel has ariſen from a diſagreement between their wives.

Wedneſday 26.

In the afternoon, a canoe from Ulietea arrived, in which was an Earee, or chief, of that iſland, who is a nephew to Oberree-roah. He brought a ſheep with him: the poor animal was infected with the mange, and in very poor condition. The climate had not, as far as I could judge, altered the quality of the wool, with which he was well covered, except a part about the ſhoulders. I imagine this animal to be the Engliſh ewe left by Captain Cook. The owner aſſured me that there were ten ſheep at Huaheine; the

the truth of which I much doubted. I was ſurpriſed, and rather mortified, to find that he ſet ſo little value on this, as to let me have it, at the firſt word, for a ſmall adze. I ſent it to be kept at Poeeno's, with the heifer. 1788. NOVEMBER.

Friday the 28th. Tinah and his wife returned to Matavai, and, from appearances which I have no reaſon to miſtruſt, were ſincerely glad to ſee me again after their ſhort abſence. They brought, as uſual, a preſent of a hog and fruit. This morning there was an eclipſe of the ſun, but the weather was ſo cloudy, that I had only an opportunity of obſerving the end of the eclipſe, which was at 19h 43′ 53″. Friday 28.

I ſent a man to ſhear the ewe, by which a remedy could more eaſily be applied to cure the diſeaſe with which it was infected. The garden made near the tents was not in a proſperous condition: moſt of the melons and cucumbers were deſtroyed by inſects; and the ſoil, being ſandy, was not favourable to the other ſeeds. I therefore choſe another ſpot of ground, farther from the ſea-ſide, and had an aſſortment of ſeeds ſown. Saturday 29.

DECEMBER. December the 1ſt. In the night, the rudder of one of the boats was ſtolen from the tents. On landing in the morning, neither Tinah nor any of his family came near me, being, I was informed, afraid of my diſpleaſure. As the loſs was not great, I immediately ſent to aſſure them that I had no anger, except againſt the perſon who committed the theft. In conſequence of this meſſage, Tinah and ſome of the other chiefs came to the tents, and promiſed that they would exert themſelves to diſcover the thief, and get the rudder reſtored. This was the firſt theft, of any conſequence, that had been committed ſince the tents were on ſhore; and my ſuſpicions fell chiefly on the people who were here from ſome of the other iſlands. Monday 1.

1788. DECEMBER. Tinah had juſt began to build a houſe for himſelf, and I promiſed that our carpenters ſhould aſſiſt him. Whydooah, the youngeſt brother of Tinah, had lately been one of my conſtant viſitors, and ſeemed to have left off his former cuſtom of getting drunk with the Ava. He was eſteemed one of their beſt warriors; and I was told that in the quarrel with the people of Eimeo, he killed Maheine the chief of that iſland.

Friday 5. The weather for ſome time paſt had been very unſettled. This afternoon, the wind blew freſh from the N.W, which occaſioned the ſea to break very high acroſs the Dolphin bank; and in the night ſuch a heavy broken ſea came into the bay, that we were obliged to batten all the hatchways down, and to keep every body upon deck all night, though the rain came down in torrents. The ſhip

Saturday 6. rolled in a moſt violent manner. In the morning the wind increaſing, and there being no poſſibility of putting to ſea, we ſtruck yards and topmaſts, and truſted to our anchors. The river ſwelled ſo much with the rain, that the point of land on which the tents ſtood became an iſland; and, to preſerve the bread-fruit plants from being endangered, the people were obliged to cut a paſſage for the river through a part of the beach, at a diſtance from the tents. The ſea broke very high on the beach; nevertheleſs, a canoe put off, and, to my ſurpriſe, Tinah, his wife, and Moannah, made their way good through the ſurf, and came on board to ſee me. There was no other perſon in the canoe, for the weather did not admit of uſeleſs paſſengers: each of them had a paddle, which they managed with great activity and ſkill. Theſe kind people embraced me with many tears, and expreſſed their apprehenſions for the ſafety of the ſhip. Towards noon, however, the ſea abated conſide-

rably, but the wind continued to blow ſtrong from the NW. At ſun-ſet, Iddeah went on ſhore, but Tinah would remain with me the whole night. 1788. DECEMBER.

Sunday the 7th. The wind continued between the North and NW, but had ſo much moderated, that I no longer conſidered our ſituation to be alarming. At noon Iddeah returned to the ſhip, with a large hog, and a ſupply of bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts; and ſoon after, ſhe and Tinah left the ſhip, having exacted a promiſe from me, that if the weather was moderate, I would go on ſhore in the morning, and viſit their parents and ſiſter, who, they told me, had been much alarmed on our account. I received a viſit likewiſe from Poeeno and his wife. This woman had always ſhewn great regard for us; and now, on our meeting, before I could be aware of it, ſhe began beating her head violently with a ſhark's tooth, ſo that her face was covered with blood in an inſtant. I put a ſtop to this as ſoon as I could, and, with the drying up of the blood, her agitation ſubſided. This ceremony is frequently performed, upon occaſions either of joy or grief. Her huſband ſaid, that, if any accident happened to the ſhip, I ſhould live with him, and that they would cut down trees, and build me another ſhip. Sunday 7.

From this ſample of the weather, and the information of the natives, I was convinced it would not be ſafe to continue in Matavai Bay much longer; and I determined to get every thing ready for ſailing as ſpeedily as I could.

The night proved moderate; and in the morning, I went on ſhore, where I was received by Oberree-roah, and ſeveral other friends, with great affection. Monday 8.

The plants received no injury from the bad weather, having been carefully covered from the ſpray of the ſea: ſome were in a dormant ſtate, and others were ſtriking out

1788. DECEMBER. out young ſhoots. Nelſon thought that it was better to refrain a few days from taking them on board; I therefore conſented to defer it. He was of opinion that the plants could be propagated from the roots only, and I directed ſome boxes to be filled, as we could ſtow them where no others could be placed.

Tueſday 9. This afternoon, in hauling the launch on ſhore to be repaired, many of the natives aſſiſting, one of them, a fine boy about ten years old, was thrown down, and a roller which was placed under the boat went over him. The ſurgeon being ill, I ſent off for his aſſiſtant. Fortunately no limb was broken, nor did he receive any material injury. The ſurgeon had been a long time ill, the effect of intemperance and indolence. He had latterly ſcarce ever ſtirred out of his cabin, but was not apprehended to be in a dangerous ſtate; nevertheleſs, this evening he appeared to be ſo much worſe than uſual, that it was thought neceſſary to remove him to ſome place where he could have more air; but to no effect, for he died in an hour afterwards. This unfortunate man drank very hard, and was ſo averſe to exerciſe, that he never would be prevailed on to take half a dozen turns upon deck at a time, in the whole courſe of the voyage.

Wedneſday 10. As I wiſhed to bury the ſurgeon on ſhore, I mentioned it to Tinah; who ſaid there would be no objection, but that it would be neceſſary to aſk his father's conſent firſt; which he undertook to do, and immediately left me for that purpoſe. By this circumſtance it appears, that though the eldeſt ſon of an Earee ſucceeds to the title and honours of the father as ſoon as he is born, yet a conſiderable portion of authority remains with the father, even after the ſon is of age. When Tinah returned, I went with him to the ſpot intended for the burial place, taking

with us two men to dig the grave; but on our arrival, I found the natives had already begun it. Tinah aſked me, if they were doing right? "There," ſays he, "the ſun riſes, and there it ſets." The idea that the grave ſhould be eaſt and weſt, I imagine they learnt from the Spaniards, as the captain of one of their ſhips was buried at Oeitepeha in 1774. Certain it is, they had not the information from any body belonging to our ſhip; for I believe we ſhould not have thought of it. The grave, however, was marked out very exactly. At four in the afternoon, the body was interred: the chiefs, and many of the natives, came to ſee the ceremony, and ſhewed great attention during the ſervice. Some of the chiefs were very inquiſitive about what was to be done with the ſurgeon's cabin, on account of apparitions. They ſaid, when a man died in Otaheite, and was carried to the Tupapow, that as ſoon as night came, he was ſurrounded by ſpirits, and if any perſon went there by himſelf, they would devour him: therefore they ſaid that not leſs than two people together ſhould go into the ſurgeon's cabin for ſome time. I did not endeavour to diſſuade them from this belief, otherwiſe than by laughing, and letting them know that we had no ſuch apprehenſions. 1788. DECEMBER.

In the afternoon, the effects of the deceaſed were diſpoſed of, and I appointed Mr. Thomas Denman Ledward, the ſurgeon's mate, to do duty as ſurgeon.

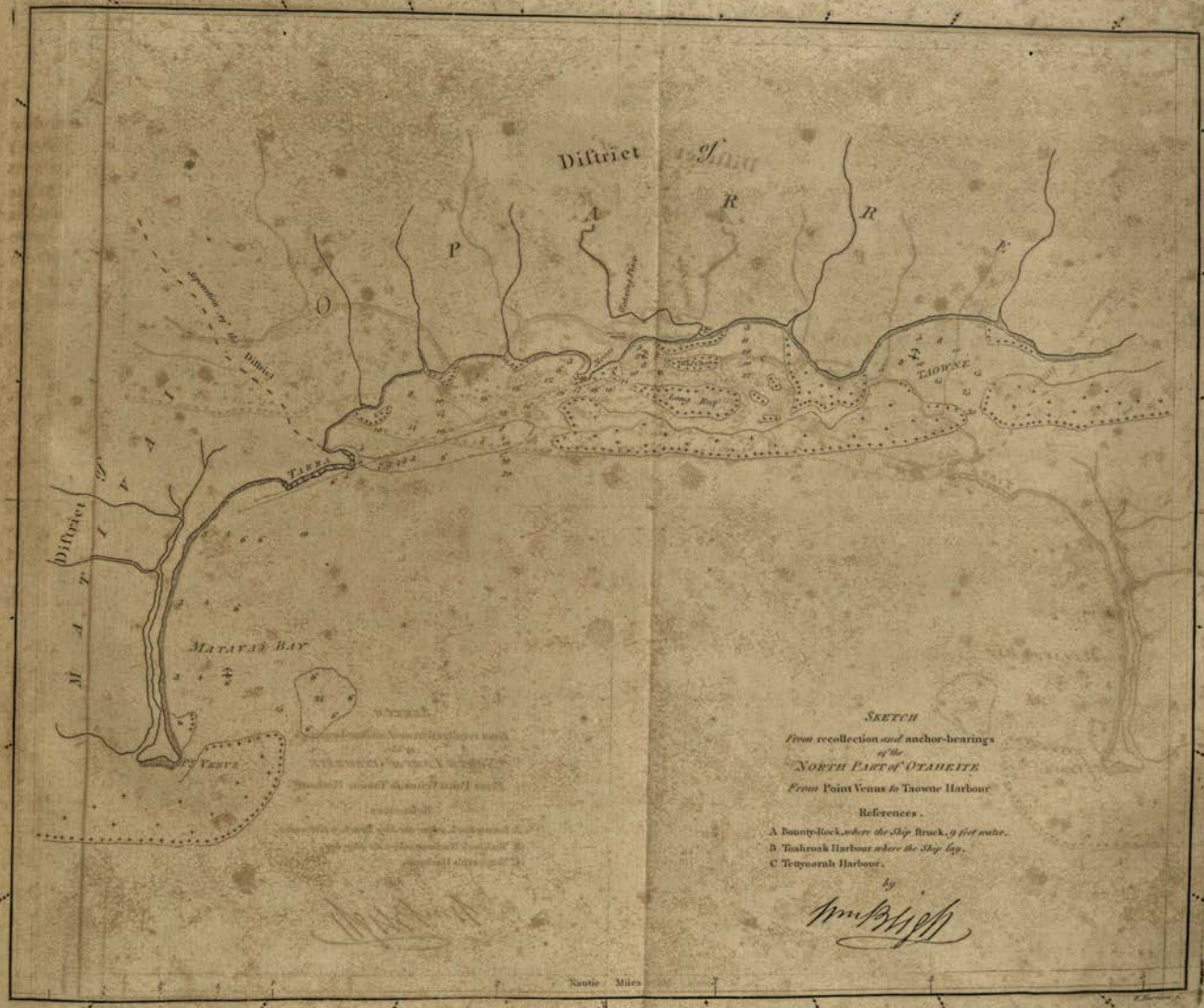
I went in a boat to examine the harbours about Oparre, and found two formed by the reefs. The weſternmoſt is the moſt convenient for ſailing in or out, but is not well ſheltered from a N W wind or ſea. This harbour is called by the natives Taowne: it is about a league and a half diſtant from Point Venus, and may be known by a remarkable mountain, called by the natives Wawry, which bears S S E from the entrance. Friday 12.

The

1788. DECEMBER. The eaſternmoſt harbour is called Toahroah. It is ſmall, but as ſecure as a reef harbour can well be. It is about three miles diſtant from Point Venus. The chief objection to this harbour is the difficulty of getting out with the common trade wind, the entrance being on the eaſt ſide, not more than one hundred yards wide, and the depth without, inconvenient for warping. On the ſouth ſide of the entrance is a Morai: the reef ſide is to be kept on board, and a look-out to be kept from aloft, whence the ſhoal water is better diſcerned than from the deck.

Sunday 14. This forenoon, we performed divine ſervice. Many of the principal natives attended, and behaved with great decency. Some of the women at one time betrayed an inclination to laugh at our general reſponſes; but, on my looking at them, they appeared much aſhamed. After the ſervice, I was aſked if no offering was to be made for the Eatua to eat.

The weather had been fair all the laſt week, and at this time appeared quite ſettled; ſo that I was under no apprehenſions of danger from continuing a little longer in Matavai bay.



SKETCH

From recollection *and* anchor-bearings

of the

NORTH PART of OTAHEITE

From Point Venus *to* Taowne Harbour

References.

A Bounty-Rock, *where the Ship* Struck, *9 feet water.*

B Toahroah Harbour *where the Ship lay.*

C Teiyeeorah Harbour.

by

Published according to Act of Parliament July 20th 1791.

CHAP. IX.

A Walk into the Country.—The Peeah Roah.—Prevailed on, by the Kindneſs of the Chiefs, to defer our Departure.—Bread-fruit Plants collected.—Move the Ship to Toahroah Harbour.—Fiſhing.—Three of the Ship's Company deſert.—Indiſcretion of our People on Shore.—Inſtances of Jealouſy.—Mourning.—Bull brought to Oparre by a Prophet.—The Deſerters recovered.—Tinah propoſes to viſit England.

1788. DECEMBER. Wedneſday 17.

WEDNESDAY the 17th. This morning I took a walk into the country, accompanied by Nelſon and my old friend Moannah. The breadth of the border of low land, before we arrived at the foot of the hills, was near three miles. This part of our journey was through a delightful country, well covered with bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees, and ſtrewed with houſes, in which were ſwarms of children. We then proceeded along a valley, ſtill among houſes, with plantations of yams, tarro, the cloth-plant, and their favourite root the Ava: there were bread-fruit trees on the ſides of the hills, which were dwarfs in compariſon of thoſe on the low land. Our walk was very much interrupted by a river, the courſe of which was ſo ſerpentine, that we had to croſs it ſeveral times, being carried over on men's ſhoulders.

On arriving at a Morai, I ſaw a number of the natives collected, and was informed that the prieſts were performing their devotions. Sixteen men were ſitting on their heels;

1788. DECEMBER. in the front was a pole covered with a plaited cocoa-nut branch, and before each of the men there was a number of ſmall pieces of the ſame leaf plaited, which they call *Hahyree*, and each had likewiſe a piece round his wriſt. One, who appeared to be the chief prieſt, prayed aloud, and was anſwered by all the reſt together: after a few ſhort ſentences and reſponſes, they roſe, and each carried an hahyree, which they placed at the foot of the pole, and returned to prayer: this was repeated till all the hahyree were delivered, and then the ceremony ended. I muſt not forget to mention, that they had placed, near the pole, an offering of plantains and bread-fruit, which they left for the Eatua. They very kindly aſked us to partake of a roaſted hog, that had been prepared for them whilſt they were praying; but as I wiſhed to make the moſt of the morning, before the ſun was too high, I declined their offer, and Moannah beſpoke refreſhments to be ready for us when we returned.

We continued our walk up the valley, which became very narrow, and had advanced a conſiderable way beyond all the houſes and plantations, when we were ſuddenly ſtopped by a caſcade, that fell into the river from a height of above 200 feet: the fall at this time was not great, but in the heavy rains muſt be conſiderable. The natives look upon this as the moſt wonderful ſight in the iſland. The fall of water is the leaſt curious part; the cliff, over which it comes, is perpendicular, forming an appearance as if ſupported by ſquare pillars of ſtone, and with a regularity that is ſurpriſing. Underneath is a pool eight or nine feet deep, into which the water falls; and in this place all the natives make a point of bathing once in their lives, probably from ſome religious idea.

The hills here approach each other within a few yards,

and are well covered with wood. As the road appeared difficult, I did not care to proceed towards the mountain. I cannot with certainty ſay how far this curious precipice is from the bay, but think, in the road by which we went, it cannot be leſs than ſeven miles. It is called Peeah Roah. 1788. DECEMBER.

In our return, we found a young pig prepared for us, and we made a hearty meal. We dined in the houſe of an old acquaintance of Nelſon's; for whom he had, in 1777, planted the two ſhaddock plants, formerly mentioned, which he had brought from the Friendly Iſlands. Theſe we had the ſatisfaction to ſee were grown to fine trees, and full of fruit.

In their plantations they do not take much pains, except with the Ava and the Cloth-plant, both of which they are careful to keep clear of weeds. Many of the plantations of the cloth-plant were fenced with ſtone, and ſurrounded with a ditch. The yams and plantains are moſtly on the higher grounds. As ſoon as we had finiſhed our dinner, we returned towards the ſhip. I was much delighted, in this walk, with the number of children that I ſaw in every part of the country: they are very handſome and ſprightly, and full of antic tricks. They have many diverſions that are common with the boys in England; ſuch as flying kites, cats cradle, ſwinging, dancing or jumping in a rope, walking upon ſtilts, and wreſtling.

Friday the 19th. The wind to-day blew freſh, but continued regular from the E and E S E. We had likewiſe much rain, and a long ſwell ſet into the bay. I had not yet determined, whether, on leaving Matavai bay, I would go to the iſland Eimeo, or to the harbour of Toahroah near Oparre: this uncertainty made Tinah, and the reſt of my friends, very anxious; and they appeared much diſtreſſed on my deſiring them, this afternoon, to ſend on board all the things Friday 19.

1788. DECEMBER. which they wiſhed to have repaired by the forge, without delay, that what they wanted might be done before the ſhip left Matavai, which I told them would be in a few days. They very earneſtly intreated I would ſtay one month longer. I repreſented this as impoſſible, and aſked Tinah if he would not go with me to Eimeo; but he ſaid, that, notwithſtanding my protection, he was certain the Eimeo people would watch for an opportunity to kill him. He remained on board with me all night, but his wife went on ſhore, and returned early in the morning, bringing with her ſome axes, and other things, that were in need of repair.

Saturday 20. When I went on ſhore, I found Otow, Oberree-roah, Moannah, and ſeveral others, in great tribulation at the thoughts that we were ſo ſoon to leave them. All the people of Matavai, I ſaw, were much concerned at my intention of going to Eimeo, and took every opportunity to prejudice me againſt the people of that iſland; to which I paid very little attention, as their motive was obvious. Their expreſſions of friendſhip and affection for me, however, I could not diſregard, as I had no doubt of their being genuine and unaffected; and I felt my unwillingneſs to leave theſe kind people ſo much increaſed, that the next

Sunday 21. day, I ſent the maſter in the launch to re-examine the depth of water between this bay and Toahroah harbour. He returned in the evening, and acquainted me, that he found a good bottom, with not leſs than ſixteen fathoms depth all the way. The harbour of Toahroah appearing every way ſafe, I determined to get the ſhip there as ſpeedily as poſſible, and I immediately made my intention public, which occaſioned great rejoicing.

Wedneſday 24. This day, we took the plants on board, being 774 pots, all in a healthy ſtate; for whenever any plant had an unfa-

vourable appearance, it was replaced by another. The number of thoſe rejected was 302, of which not one in ten but was found to be growing at the root. 1788. DECEMBER.

The natives reckon eight kinds of the bread-fruit tree, each of which they diſtinguiſh by a different name. 1. *Patteah.* 2. *Eroroo.* 3. *Awanna.* 4. *Mi-re.* 5. *Oree.* 6. *Powerro.* 7. *Appeere.* 8. *Rowdeeah.* In the firſt, fourth, and eighth claſs, the leaf differs from the reſt; the fourth is more ſinuated; the eighth has a large broad leaf, not at all ſinuated. The difference of the fruit is principally in the firſt and eighth claſs. In the firſt, the fruit is rather larger and more of an oblong form: in the eighth, it is round and not above half the ſize of the others. I enquired if plants could be produced from the ſeed, and was told they could not, but that they muſt be taken from the root. The plants are beſt collected after wet weather, at which time the earth balls round the roots, and they are not liable to ſuffer by being moved.

The moſt common method of dividing time at Otaheite is by moons; but they likewiſe make a diviſion of the year into ſix parts, each of which is diſtinguiſhed by the name of the kind of bread-fruit then in ſeaſon. In this diviſion they keep a ſmall interval called *Tawa*, in which they do not uſe the bread-fruit. This is about the end of February, when the fruit is not in perfection; but there is no part of the year in which the trees are entirely bare.

Thurſday the 25th. At day-light we unmoored, and I ſent the tents in the launch to Oparre, with directions that after landing them, the launch ſhould meet the ſhip in the entrance of Toahroah harbour, to ſhow the ſafeſt part of the channel. At half paſt ten, we got the ſhip under ſail, and ran down under top-ſails: when we were near Thurſday 25.

1788. DECEMBER. near the launch, it fell calm, and the ſhip ſhot paſt her. We immediately let the anchor go, but, to our great ſurpriſe, we found the ſhip was aground forwards. She had run on ſo eaſy, that we had not perceived it at the time. This accident occaſioned us much trouble, as we were obliged to ſend anchors out aſtern to get the ſhip afloat: in doing this, one of the cables ſwept a rock, and was not got clear again without much difficulty. When the ſhip was moored, Point Venus bore N 46° E. The eaſt point of the harbour N 65° E ¼ of a mile. Our diſtance from the ſhore half a cable's length; depth of water 8 ½ fathoms.

Friday 26. The next morning, on my landing, I was welcomed by all the principal people; I may ſay by the whole croud, and congratulated on the ſafety of the ſhip. Tinah ſhewed me a houſe near the water ſide, abreaſt the ſhip, which he deſired I would make uſe of, and which was large enough for all our purpoſes. He and his brother Oreepyah then deſired I would ſtay and receive a formal addreſs and preſent, which they called Otee. To this I aſſented, and a ſtool was brought for me to ſit on. They then left me with Moannah, and in a ſhort time I ſaw Tinah returning with about twenty men, who all made a ſtop at ſome diſtance, and a prieſt ſaid a ſhort prayer to the Eatua, to which the reſt made reply. A man was then ſent to me three ſeveral times, at each time bringing me a ſmall pig, and the ſtem of a plantain leaf. The firſt they told me was for the God of Brittannee, the next for King George, and the laſt for myſelf. Moannah then got up, and, without being dictated to, made an oration for me; the purport of which I underſtood to be, that I received their offering with thanks; that we were good people and friends; and therefore he exhorted them to commit no thefts:

theſts: he told them to bring their pigs, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit, and they would receive good things in return; that we took nothing without their conſent; and finally, that every man was to quit the place (the houſe we occupied) at night; for if they made any viſit in the dark, they would be killed. With this ſpeech the ceremony ended. 1788. DECEMBER.

I found this a delightful ſituation, and in every reſpect convenient. The ſhip was perfectly ſheltered by the reefs in ſmooth water, and cloſe to a fine beach without the leaſt ſurf. A ſmall river, with very good water, runs into the ſea about the middle of the harbour. I gave directions for the plants to be landed, and the ſame party to be with them as at Matavai. Tinah fixed his dwelling cloſe to our ſtation.

Some of the natives took advantage of the butcher's negligence, and ſtole his cleaver. I complained of this to the chiefs who were on board, and they promiſed that they would endeavour to recover it; but an article ſo valuable as this was to the natives, I had no great expectation of ſeeing reſtored. Monday 29.

The ſhip continued to be ſupplied by the natives as uſual. Cocoa-nuts were in ſuch plenty, that I believe not a pint of water was drank on board the ſhip in the twenty-four hours. Bread-fruit began to be ſcarce, though we purchaſed, without difficulty, a ſufficient quantity for our conſumption: there was, however, another harveſt approaching, which they expected would be fit for uſe in five or ſix weeks. The better kind of plantains alſo were become ſcarce; but a kind which they call Vayhee were in great plenty. This fruit does not hang on the trees like the other kinds, but grows upon an upright ſtalk of conſiderable ſtrength and ſubſtance. Though this plantain is inferior

1788. DECEMBER. ferior in quality to moſt of the others, it affords great ſubſiſtence to the natives. We received, almoſt every day, preſents of fiſh, chiefly dolphin and albacore, and a few ſmall rock fiſh. Their fiſhing is moſtly in the night, when they make ſtrong lights on the reefs, which attract the fiſh to them. Sometimes, in fine weather, the canoes are out in ſuch numbers, that the whole ſea appears illuminated. In the canoes they fiſh with hook and line, and on the reefs they ſtrike the fiſh with a ſpear. Some likewiſe carry out ſmall nets, which are managed by two men. In the day-time their fiſhing canoes go without the reefs, ſometimes to a conſiderable diſtance, where they fiſh with rods and lines, and catch bonetas, and other fiſh. Whenever there is a ſhow of fiſh, a fleet of canoes immediately proceeds to ſea. Their hooks being bright, are uſed without bait, in the manner of our artificial flies. Their rods are made of bamboo; but when there are any very large fiſh, they make uſe of an out-rigger over the fore part of the canoe, about twenty-five feet in length, which has two prongs at the extremity, to each of which is faſtened a hook and line; and when a fiſh takes the hook, it is raiſed by

1789. JANUARY. ropes managed by two men in the ſtern of the canoe.

Thurſday 1. Contrary to my expectation, Tinah, this afternoon, brought on board the cleaver that had been ſtolen. The thief had taken it to Attahooroo, and Tinah told me, which I could eaſily believe, that it was given up with great re-

Friday 2. luctance. The next morning I offered Tinah a preſent of axes, and other things; but, as he ſuſpected this was meant by way of return for getting the cleaver reſtored, he would not be prevailed with to accept a ſingle article.

I had conſtantly the company of Tinah, his wife, and ſome of his relations; but the royal children, though ſo near

near us, never came in ſight of the ſhip. The river ſeparated them from the place occupied by our people on ſhore; and, for fear of giving alarm or offence, I gave ſtrict orders that no one ſhould attempt to go near their place of reſidence. 1769. JANUARY.

Monday the 5th. At the relief of the watch, at four o'clock this morning, the ſmall cutter was miſſing. I was immediately informed of it, and muſtered the ſhip's company; when it appeared, that three men were abſent, Charles Churchill, the ſhip's corporal, and two of the ſeamen, William Muſprat, and John Millward; the latter of whom had been centinel from twelve to two in the morning. They had taken with them eight ſtand of arms and ammunition; but what their plan was, or which way they had gone, no one on board ſeemed to have the leaſt knowledge. I went on ſhore to the chiefs, and ſoon received information, that the boat was at Matavai; and that the deſerters had departed in a ſailing canoe for the iſland Tethuroa. On this intelligence, I ſent the maſter to Matavai to ſearch for the ſmall cutter, and one of the chiefs went with him; but before they had got half way, they met the boat with five of the natives, who were bringing her back to the ſhip. This ſervice, rendered me by the people of Matavai, pleaſed me much, and I rewarded the men accordingly. Monday 5.

I told Tinah, and the other chiefs, that I expected they would get the deſerters brought back; for that I was determined not to leave Otaheite without them. They aſſured me, that they would do every thing in their power to have them taken; and it was agreed, that Oreepyah and Moannah ſhould depart the next morning for Tethuroa. Oreepyah enquired if they had pocket piſtols, "for," ſaid he, "though we may ſurpriſe and ſeize them before they can

1789. JANUARY. "make uſe of their muſkets; yet if they have piſtols, they "may do miſchief, even while they are held." I quieted theſe apprehenſions, by aſſuring them, that the deſerters had no piſtols with them.

Tueſday 6. At day-light, Oreepyah and Moannah ſet off in two canoes for Tethuroa, but the weather became ſo boiſterous, that they were obliged to return in the forenoon, and I was happy to ſee them get ſafe in, as the ſea ran very high without the harbour. From the firſt of this month, the weather and winds had been much unſettled, with a great deal of rain. Our former ſtation at Matavai appeared not at all ſafe, the ſea at times breaking high over the Dolphin bank, and making a great ſwell in the bay. Oreepyah and Moannah both promiſed me, that they would ſail again as ſoon as the weather ſhould be fine.

Friday 9. The wind continued to blow ſtrong at ſea, though in the harbour we had, at times, but light breezes. Poeeno, from Matavai, came to ſee me to-day: he ſaid, he was apprehenſive that I was diſpleaſed with him, on account of our deſerters having been carried to Tethuroa, by a canoe from Matavai. This, he declared, had been done before he heard of it; and that the only ſervice in his power, he had not neglected to do for me, which was the ſending our boat back. As this was really an act of friendſhip, I received him with great cordiality; and he aſſured me, that there could be no doubt, from the directions Tinah had given, of the deſerters being brought to the ſhip, as ſoon as the weather would admit canoes to go after them.

Saturday 10. One of the officers, this morning, on ſhore, inadvertently plucked a branch from a tree called Tutuee, that bears the oil nut, which was growing at a Morai. On entering with it into the houſe occupied by our people, all the

natives, both men and women, immediately went away. When I went on ſhore, I found this branch tied to one of the poſts of the houſe, although the effect it had on the natives was known. I was much diſpleaſed at this piece of wantonneſs, and ordered the branch to be taken away; but the natives, notwithſtanding, would not come near the place. They ſaid the houſe was *taboo*, which I underſtand to ſignify interdicted, and that none of them might approach it till the *taboo* was taken off, which could only be done by Tinah. To take any thing away from a Morai is regarded as a kind of ſacrilege, and, they believe, gives great offence to the Eatua. At my requeſt, Tinah took off the *taboo*, but not before the afternoon. This was performed by an offering of a plantain leaf at the Morai, and a prayer made to the Eatua. After this ceremony, the houſe was reſorted to by the natives, as uſual. 1789. JANUARY.

I had not yet given up the hope of obtaining the bull from Itteah, though I had hitherto received no ſatisfactory anſwer to the meſſages which Tinah had ſent at my deſire: I therefore ſpoke to Poeeno, who undertook to negotiate this buſineſs, and I commiſſioned him to make very liberal offers. He left me after dinner, to return to Matavai. In the evening, a meſſenger arrived from him, to acquaint me, that, in his abſence, the ſheep which I had truſted to his care, had been killed by a dog; and that he had ſent the culprit, hoping that I would kill him for the offence he had committed. This poor ſheep had been ſo much diſeaſed, that I could not help ſuſpecting he died without the dog's aſſiſtance, and that the ſtory of the dog was invented to prevent my attributing it to want of care. This doubt did not appear in my anſwer; as for the dog, I told the meſſenger to do with him what he pleaſed.

Tueſday the 13th. This morning, the weather being Tueſday 13.

1789. JANUARY. more moderate than it had been for ſome days paſt, Oree-pyah ſailed with two canoes for Tethuroa. Some buſineſs prevented Moannah from accompanying him, but he fol-
Wedneſday 14. lowed the next day with two other canoes. The wood that we had got at Matavai being expended, I applied to Tinah, who ſent three trees down to the water ſide before night, which when cut up made a good launch load.

I ſaw two inſtances of jealouſy to-day, one of which had nearly produced fatal conſequences. A man was detected with a married woman, by the huſband, who ſtabbed him in the belly with a knife: fortunately the inteſtines eſcaped, and the wound did not prove dangerous. The other inſtance was, a girl, who had conſtantly lived with my coxſwain, beating another girl, that ſhe diſcovered to have been too intimate with him.

Friday 16. In walking to-day with Tinah near a Tupapow, I was ſurpriſed by a ſudden outcry of grief. As I expreſſed a deſire to ſee the diſtreſſed perſon, Tinah took me to the place, where we found a number of women, one of whom was the mother of a young female child that lay dead. On ſeeing us their mourning not only immediately ceaſed, but to my aſtoniſhment, they all burſt into an immoderate fit of laughter, and, while we remained, appeared much diverted with our viſit. I told Tinah the woman had no ſorrow for her child, otherwiſe her grief would not have ſo eaſily ſubſided; on which he jocoſely told her to cry again: they did not, however, reſume their mourning in our preſence. This ſtrange behaviour would incline us to think them hard-hearted and unfeeling, did we not know that they are fond parents, and, in general, very affectionate: it is therefore to be aſcribed to their extreme levity of diſpoſition; and it is probable, that death does not appear to them with ſo many terrors, as it does to people of a more ſerious caſt.

Sunday

Sunday the 18th. I received a meſſage from Poeeno, to acquaint me that he had been ſucceſsful in his negotiation for the bull, which he had driven part of the way by land, but could not get farther on account of the rivers, and therefore deſired a boat ſhould be ſent for him. I accordingly ordered the launch to be got ready, and at two o'clock the next morning, Mr. Fryer, the maſter, ſet off in her. 1789. JANUARY. Sunday 18. Monday 19.

In the afternoon, the launch returned with the bull, and my friend Poeeno. For the night I directed that the bull ſhould remain at Oparre, and the next day he was taken to the cow at Matavai.

Wedneſday the 21ſt. To-day, Poeeno brought to me the perſon from whom he had the bull, to receive the ſtipulated payment, which was one of every article of traffic that I had in my poſſeſſion. This man, whoſe name was Oweevee, they told me, was inſpired by a divine ſpirit; and that in all matters of conſequence he was conſulted, for that he converſed with the Eatua. It was, they ſaid, the Eatua that ordered him to demand the bull from Tinah, which not to have complied with, would have been the height of impiety. I endeavoured to convince them of the roguery of this man, thinking I had a fair argument to prove it by his ſelling that which the Eatua had ordered him to keep; but here I was eaſily defeated, for it ſeems the Eatua told him to ſell me the beaſt. This being the caſe, I ſaid, I would not give the animals to any perſon; that they were now mine, and that I would leave them under the protection of Poeeno and Tinah, who I hoped would take care of them for me till I returned. They both entered into my views, and promiſed the animals ſhould be attended to, and told me, that while they were conſidered as my property, no one would attempt to take them away. Wedneſday 21.

Thurſday

1789. JANUARY. Thurſday 22.

Thurſday the 22d. This afternoon, I received a meſſage from Teppahoo, to inform me that our deſerters had paſſed this harbour, and were at Tettaha, about five miles diſtant. I ordered the cutter to be got ready, and a little before ſun-ſet left the ſhip, taking Oedidee with me. By his advice I landed at ſome diſtance from the place where the deſerters were; but thinking it neceſſary to have the boat within call, and Oedidee aſſuring me that there was ſafe landing farther on, I directed the boat to proceed along ſhore, whilſt Oedidee and I walked along the beach. The night was very dark and windy, and the ſhore being rocky, I ſoon loſt ſight of the boat. A few of the natives had joined us in our walk; and, from their manner, I had reaſon to ſuſpect them of a deſign to cloſe upon us, with an intention, no doubt, to plunder: I was provided with pocket-piſtols, and on producing one, they left us. Oedidee was ſo much alarmed that I could ſcarce prevail on him to proceed. When we arrived at Teppahoo's houſe, we were very kindly received by him and his wife. The cutter was arrived, but, there being a very high ſurf, ſhe could not come within a hundred yards of the ſhore.

The deſerters, I was informed, were in a houſe cloſe to us, and I imagined there would be no great difficulty in ſecuring them, with the aſſiſtance of the natives. They had, however, heard of my arrival; and when I was near the houſe, they came out, without their arms, and delivered themſelves up. I ſent directions off to the boat for one of my people to come on ſhore, and for the boat to return to the place where I had landed. My next buſineſs was to ſecure the arms, which I delivered to Teppahoo to take charge of for the night. One muſket and two bayonets were miſſing, which they ſaid were loſt, by the canoe in which they came

came from Tethuroa having overſet. I then took leave of Teppahoo, who preſented us with a plentiful ſupply of proviſions, and we proceeded with the deſerters towards the boat; but as the wind had increaſed, and it rained hard, I determined to remain on ſhore till the morning; and having found ſhelter for the people, we paſſed the remainder of the night without accident. At daylight, I ſent for the arms, and we returned to the ſhip. 1789. JANUARY. Friday 23.

I learnt from the deſerters, that at Tethuroa they had ſeen Oreepyah and Moannah, who had made an attempt to ſecure them. They ſaid it was their intention to have returned to the ſhip; and it is probable that they were ſo much harraſſed by the natives watching for an opportunity to ſurpriſe them, that they might wiſh to have the merit of returning of their own accord, to avoid the diſgrace of being ſeized and brought back. At the time they delivered themſelves up to me, it was not in their power to have made reſiſtance, their ammunition having been ſpoiled by the wet.

In conſequence of my having been kept all night from the ſhip by the tempeſtuous weather, the time-keeper went down at $10^h\ 5^m\ 36^s$. Its rate, previous to this, was $1''{,}7$ loſing in 24 hours, and its error from the mean time at Greenwich was $7'\ 29''{,}2$ too ſlow. I ſet it going again by a common watch, corrected by obſervations, and endeavoured to make the error the ſame as if it had not ſtopped; but being over cautious, made me tedious in ſetting it in motion, and increaſed the error from mean time at Greenwich. The rate of going I did not find to have altered.

At dinner, Tinah congratulated me on having recovered my men, but expreſſed ſome concern that they had not been brought by Oreepyah and Moannah; leſt I ſhould imagine they had not done every thing in their power. To this I replied, that I was perfectly ſatisfied of their good intentions to ſerve me,

1789. JANUARY. me, and that I conſidered myſelf under great obligations to them for the trouble they had been at on my account. I learnt afterwards that they had actually ſeized and bound the deſerters, but had been prevailed upon, by fair promiſes of their returning peaceably to the ſhip, to let them looſe: the deſerters, however, finding an opportunity to get poſſeſſion of their arms again, ſet the natives at defiance.

Friday 30. This afternoon, I puniſhed one of the ſeamen, Iſaac Martin, with nineteen laſhes, for ſtriking an Indian. This was a tranſgreſſion of ſo ſerious a nature, and ſuch a direct violation of my orders, that I would on no account be prevailed on to forgive it, though great interceſſion was made by ſome of the chiefs.

Oreepyah and Moannah were not yet returned from Tethuroa. This place is reſorted to by the principal people of this part of Otaheite, at particular ſeaſons, when fiſh are in great plenty there. It was deſcribed to me to be a group of ſmall keys, ſurrounded by a reef: their produce is chiefly cocoa-nuts and plantains. During the ſeaſon, bread-fruit and other proviſions are daily carried over from Otaheite. Not leſs than a hundred ſail of canoes were at Tethuroa when our deſerters were there.

Teppahoo and his wife were become my conſtant viſitors: he had for ſome time paſt been ill, and had made Oparre his place of reſidence, for the benefit of our ſurgeon's advice and aſſiſtance. At this time he complained of a hoarſeneſs and ſore-throat. Mr. Ledward, on examining him, diſcovered there had been two holes in the roof of his mouth, which, though healed, had the appearance of having been large: the adjacent parts appeared ſound, yet the ſurgeon was of opinion that they were cancerous, and would in the end occaſion his death.

This

1789. JANUARY. Saturday 31.

This morning, I ordered all the chefts to be taken on ſhore, and the inſide of the ſhip to be waſhed with boiling water, to kill the cockroaches. We were conſtantly obliged to be at great pains to keep the ſhip clear of vermin, on account of the plants.—By the help of traps and good cats, we were freed from rats and mice. When I was at Otaheite with Captain Cook, there were great numbers of rats about all the houſes, and ſo tame, that they flocked round the people at their meals for the offals, which were commonly thrown to them; but, at this time, we ſcarce ever ſaw a rat, which muſt be attributed to the induſtry of a breed of cats left here by European ſhips.

After breakfaſt, I walked with Tinah to Matavai, to ſee the cattle and the gardens. Tinah had already taken ſo large a doſe of the Ava, that he was perfectly ſtupified. Iddeah, however, was with us, and ſhe is one of the moſt intelligent perſons I met with at Otaheite. We went firſt to Poeeno's houſe, and ſaw the bull and cow together in a very fine paſture. I was informed that the cow had taken the bull; ſo that, if no untoward accident happens, there is a fair chance of the breed being eſtabliſhed. In the garden, near Poeeno's houſe, many things had failed. The Indian corn was in a fine ſtate, and I have no doubt but they will cultivate it all over the country. A fig-tree was in a very thriving way, as were two vines, a pine-apple plant, and ſome ſlips of a ſhaddock-tree. From this place, we walked to the garden at Point Venus; but I had the mortification to find almoſt every thing there deſtroyed by the hogs. Some underground peaſe and Indian corn had eſcaped, and likewiſe the caliloo green and ocra of Jamaica.

We returned to the ſhip; and after dinner I was not a little ſurpriſed to hear Tinah ſeriouſly propoſe that he and his

1789. JANUARY. wife ſhould go with me to England. He ſaid he would only take two ſervants; that he much wiſhed to ſee King George, who, he was ſure, would be glad to ſee him. Tinah and many of his countrymen were become extremely eager to get a knowledge of other countries, and were continually enquiring about the ſituations of the iſlands which we told them of in theſe ſeas. To quiet his importunity, I was obliged to promiſe, that I would aſk the king's permiſſion to carry them to England, if I came again; that then I ſhould be in a larger ſhip, and could have accommodations properly fitted up. I was ſorry to find, that Tinah was apprehenſive he ſhould be attacked by his enemies, as ſoon as our ſhip left Otaheite, and that if they joined, they would be too powerful for him. The illneſs of Teppahoo, with whom he was on good terms, gave him much uneaſineſs; Teppahoo's wife being a ſiſter of Otow's and aunt to Tinah. They have no children, as has been before related; and if Teppahoo were to die, he would be ſucceeded, as Earee of the diſtrict of Tettaha, by his brother, who is an enemy to Tinah. I have on every occaſion endeavoured to make the principal people believe that we ſhould return again to Otaheite, and that we ſhould revenge any injury done in our abſence to the people of Matavai and Oparre.

The wife of Oedidee is likewiſe an aunt to Tinah, and ſiſter to Otow. His native place is Ulietea, where he has ſome property; but which, I imagine, is not of ſuch conſequence to him as the countenance of the chiefs with whom he is connected at Otaheite.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Ship's Cable cut in the Night.—Coolneſs with the Chiefs on that Account.—Viſit to an old Lady.—Diſturbance at a Heiva.—Tinah's Hoſpitality.—A Thief taken, and puniſhed.—Preparations for ſailing.

1777. FEBRUARY. Tueſday 3.

I WAS preſent, this afternoon, at a wreſtling match, where a young man, by an unlucky fall, put his arm out of joint at the elbow: three ſtout men immediately took hold of him, and two of them fixing their feet againſt his ribs, replaced it. I had ſent for our ſurgeon, but before he arrived, all was well, except a ſmall ſwelling of the muſcles, in conſequence of the ſtrain. I enquired what they would have done if the bone had been broken; and, to ſhew me their practice, they got a number of ſticks and placed round a man's arm, which they bound with cord. That they have conſiderable ſkill in ſurgery is not to be doubted. I have before mentioned an inſtance of an amputated arm being perfectly healed, and which had every appearance of having been treated with great propriety.

The part of the beach neareſt the ſhip, was become the general place of reſort towards the cloſe of the day. An hour before ſun-ſet, the inhabitants began to collect, and here they amuſed themſelves with exerciſing the lance, dancing, and various kinds of merriment, till nearly dark, when they retired to their homes. Of this cheerful ſcene, we were ſpectators and partakers, every fine evening.

1789. FEBRUARY. Friday 6. Friday the 6th. An occurrence happened to-day that gave me great concern, not only on account of the danger with which the ſhip had been threatened, but as it tended greatly to diminiſh the confidence and good underſtanding which had hitherto been conſtantly preſerved between us and the natives. The wind had blown freſh in the night, and at day-light we diſcovered that the cable, by which the ſhip rode, had been cut near the water's edge, in ſuch a manner, that only one ſtrand remained whole. While we were ſecuring the ſhip, Tinah came on board. I could not but believe he was perfectly innocent of the tranſaction; nevertheleſs, I ſpoke to him in a very peremptory manner, and inſiſted upon his diſcovering and bringing to me the offender. I was wholly at a loſs how to account for this malicious act. My ſuſpicions fell chiefly, I may ſay wholly, on the ſtrangers that came to us from other parts of the iſland; for we had on every occaſion, received ſuch unreſerved and unaffected marks of good-will from the people of Matavai and Oparre, that in my own mind I entirely acquitted them. The anger which I expreſſed, however, created ſo much alarm, that old Otow and his wife (the father and mother of Tinah) immediately quitted Oparre, and retired to the mountains in the midſt of heavy rain, as did Teppahoo and his family. Tinah and Iddeah remained, and expoſtulated with me on the unreaſonableneſs of my anger againſt them. He ſaid, that he would exert his utmoſt endeavours to diſcover the guilty perſon; but it might poſſibly not be in his power to get him delivered up, which would be the caſe, if he was either of Tiarraboo, Attahooroo, or of the iſland Eimeo. That the attempt might have been made as much out of enmity to the people of Matavai and Oparre as to me; every one knowing the regard I had for them, and that I had declared

clared I would protect them againſt their enemies. All this I was inclined to believe; but I did not think proper to appear perfectly ſatisfied, leſt Tinah, who was naturally very indolent, ſhould be remiſs in his endeavours to detect the offender. To guard as much as poſſible againſt future attempts of this kind, I directed a ſtage to be built on the forecaſtle, ſo that the cables ſhould be more directly under the eye of the centinel; and I likewiſe gave orders that one of the midſhipmen ſhould keep watch forward. 1789. FEBRUARY.

In the afternoon, Oreepyah returned from Tethuroa. He told me, that Moannah and himſelf had narrowly eſcaped being loſt in the bad weather, and that Moannah had been obliged to take ſhelter at Eimeo. Several canoes had been loſt lately in their paſſage to or from Tethuroa. The overſetting of their canoes is not the only riſk they have to encounter, but is productive of another danger more dreadful; for at ſuch times many become a prey to the ſharks, which are very numerous in theſe ſeas. I was informed likewiſe, that they were ſometimes attacked by a fiſh, which, by their deſcription, I imagine to be the barracoota, as they attribute to it the ſame propenſity.

Saturday paſſed without my ſeeing any thing of Tinah, the whole day. The next morning, he and Iddeah came to me, and aſſured me that they had made the ſtricteſt enquiries concerning the injury intended us, but had not been able to diſcover any circumſtance which could lead them to ſuſpect who were concerned in it. This was not at all ſatisfactory, and I behaved towards them with great coolneſs, at which they were much diſtreſſed; and Iddeah, at length, gave vent to her ſorrow by tears. I could no longer keep up the appearance of miſtruſting them; but I earneſtly recommended to them, as they valued the Sunday 8.

King

1789. FEBRUARY. King of England's friendſhip, that they would exert their utmoſt endeavours to find out the offenders; which they faithfully promiſed. Our reconciliation accordingly took place, and meſſengers were ſent to acquaint Otow and Teppahoo, and to invite them to return.

It has ſince occurred to me, that this attempt to cut the ſhip adrift, was moſt probably the act of ſome of our own people; whoſe purpoſe of remaining at Otaheite might have been effectually anſwered, without danger, if the ſhip had been driven on ſhore. At the time, I entertained not the leaſt thought of this kind, nor did the poſſibility of it enter into my ideas, having no ſuſpicion that ſo general an inclination, or ſo ſtrong an attachment to theſe iſlands, could prevail among my people, as to induce them to abandon every proſpect of returning to their native country.

A meſſenger came to me this afternoon, from the Earee of Tiarrabou, the S E diviſion of Otaheite, with an invitation for me to viſit him. I excuſed myſelf on account of the diſtance, and, at Tinah's requeſt, ſent back by the meſſenger a handſome preſent, which I hope Tinah will get the credit of. I obſerved, with much ſatisfaction, that a great part of what Tinah had received from me, he had diſtributed; to ſome, out of friendſhip and eſteem, and to others, from motives of political civility.

Tueſday 10. Teppahoo and his family left us to-day to go to Tettaha, where a grand heiva was to be performed, at which their preſence was required.

Weineſday 11. A ſmall party of heiva people paſſed through Oparre this morning, in their way to Tettaha, where they were going by appointment. They had the civility to ſend me word, that, if I choſe, they would ſtay to perform a ſhort heiva before me; and I immediately attended. It began by a dance

dance of two young girls, to the muſic of drums and flutes, which laſted no long time; at the concluſion, they ſuddenly dropped all their dreſs, which was left as a preſent for me, and went off without my ſeeing them any more. After this, the men danced: their performance was more indecent than any I had before ſeen, but was not the leſs applauded on that account by the natives, who ſeemed much delighted. 1789. FEBRUARY.

After this entertainment, I went with Tinah and Iddeah, to pay a viſit to an old lady named Wanow-oora, widow to Towah, the late Earee of Tettaha, who conducted the expedition againſt Eimeo, when Captain Cook was here in 1777. The old lady had juſt landed, and we found her ſitting on the beach, by the head of her canoe. With Tinah, was a prieſt and three men, who carried a young dog, a fowl, and two young plantain boughs: theſe were intended for the offering, or preſent, called Otee. Tinah and his party ſeated themſelves at about ten yards diſtance from Wanow-oora, and were addreſſed by her, in ſhort ſentences, for a few minutes, and received her Otee, which was exactly the ſame as his. Tinah's prieſt, in return, made a ſhort prayer, and his offering was preſented to the old lady. Tinah then roſe and went to her, and embraced her in a very affectionate manner; and ſhe returned his kindneſs with tears, and many expreſſions which I could not underſtand. Soon after, he conducted her to a ſhed, and we remained with her till it was time to go on board to dinner. I invited her to be of the party, but ſhe excuſed herſelf on account of age and infirmity. Tinah gave directions for her and her attendants to be ſupplied with whatever they had occaſion for, and we went off to the ſhip.

Friday the 13th. This forenoon, Tinah ſent to inform me, that Friday 13.

1789. FEBRUARY. that many ſtrangers were arrived from all parts, to be preſent at a grand heiva, which he had prepared in compliment to me. I accordingly went on ſhore, and found a great crowd of people collected together. A ring was made at a little diſtance from our poſt, and Tinah and ſeveral other chiefs came to meet me. When we were all ſeated, the heiva began by women dancing; after which a preſent of cloth, and a tawme or breaſt-plate, was laid before me. This ceremony being over, the men began to wreſtle, and regularity was no longer preſerved. Old Otow came to me, and deſired I would help to put a ſtop to the wreſtling, as the people came from different diſtricts, ſome of which were ill diſpoſed towards others. What Otow had apprehended was not without reaſon, for in an inſtant the whole was tumult: every man took to his arms, and, as I found my ſingle interference could be of no ſervice, I retired to our poſt, and ordered all my people there under arms. At the time the diſturbance began, Tinah and Iddeah were abſent: their firſt care was for me, and Iddeah came to ſee if I was ſafe at the poſt. She had a double covering of cloth round her, and her waiſt was girded with a large rope. I deſired her to ſtay under my protection: this ſhe would not conſent to, but ſaid ſhe would return as ſoon as all was over; and away ſhe went.

I immediately gave orders for two guns to be fired from the ſhip without ſhot, which had a good effect: and, as no chief was concerned in the tumult, but, on the contrary, all of them exerted their influence to prevent miſchief, every thing was ſoon quiet, and Tinah and Iddeah returned to let me know that all was ſettled. They went on board, with ſome other chiefs, and dined with me.

After dinner, I went on ſhore with Tinah and his friends;

friends; and I found three large hogs dreſſed, and a quantity of bread-fruit, which he had ordered to be prepared before he went on board, and now deſired I would preſent them to the different parties that had come to ſee the entertainment:—one to the chief people of Attahooroo, one to the Arreoys, and a third to the performers of the heiva. I preſented them according to his directions, and they were received with thankfulneſs and pleaſure. This I looked upon as very handſomely done on the part of Tinah, and I was glad to ſee that it was regarded in the ſame light by his gueſts. Theſe inſtances of liberality make full amends for the little ſlips which I have formerly noticed in Tinah. At this time, a day ſeldom paſſed, that he did not give proofs of his hoſpitality, by entertaining the principal people that came from different parts of the iſland to viſit him, or to ſee the ſhip. Some of the chiefs he commonly invited to dine on board, and made proviſion for others on ſhore. Scarce any perſon of conſequence went away without receiving ſome preſent from him. This I encouraged, and was glad it was in my power to aſſiſt him. But, beſides the political motives that I have alluded to, it would be unjuſt to Tinah not to acknowledge that his diſpoſition ſeemed improved: he was more open and unreſerved in his manners than formerly, and his hoſpitality was natural and without oſtentation. 1789. FEBRUARY.

Monday the 16th. I was preſent this afternoon, at a wreſtling match by women. The manner of challenging, and method of attack, was exactly the ſame as among the men. The only difference that I could obſerve, was not in favour of the ſofter ſex; for in theſe conteſts they ſhewed leſs temper and more animoſity than I could have imagined them capable of. The women, I was told, not only wreſtle with each other, but ſometimes with Monday 16.

1789. FEBRUARY. the men; of this I have never ſeen an inſtance, and imagine it can happen but ſeldom, as the women in general are ſmall, and by no means maſculine. Iddeah is ſaid to be very famous at this exerciſe.

Tueſday 17. I walked with Tinah towards the hills, to ſee his country reſidence, which was at a very neat houſe, pleaſantly ſituated, and ſurrounded with plantations. From this place we ſaw the iſland Tethuroa. The next morning, I went to Matavai, to look after the Indian corn, which I judged would be full ripe for gathering; but, on my arrival, I found that the natives had been before hand with me, the whole being taken away. This I was not at all ſorry for, as it ſhows that they value it too much to neglect cultivating it.

Monday 23. Iddeah ſent on board, for our dinners to-day, a very fine tarro pudding; and Tinah brought a bunch of bananas, that weighed 81 lbs. on which were 286 fine fruit: ten had broken off in the carriage. The tarro pudding is excellent eating, and eaſily made: I ſhall deſcribe this piece of cookery, as the knowledge of it may be uſeful in the Weſt Indies. The tarro being cleared of the outſide ſkin, is grated down, and made up in rolls of about half a pound each, which they cover neatly with leaves, and bake for near half an hour. An equal quantity of ripe cocoa-nut meat is likewiſe grated, from which, through a ſtrainer, the rich milky juice is expreſſed. This juice is heated, by putting ſmooth hot ſtones in the veſſel that contains it, and the tarro is then mixed with it, and kept conſtantly ſtirring to prevent burning, till it is ready, which is known by the cocoa-nut juice turning to a clear oil.

Wedneſday 25. Iddeah was very uneaſy to-day, on account of her youngeſt child being ill. She would not accept of aſſiſtance from our ſurgeon, but ſaid ſhe had ſent to Tettaha for a man,

man, who ſhe expected would come and tell her what to do. 1789. FEBRUARY.
Theſe phyſical people are called *Tata rapaow*.

Thurſday the 26th. This morning, a man died of a con- Thurſday 26.
ſumption, about two miles from our poſt. I was informed of it by Mr. Peckover, the gunner, who I had deſired to look out for ſuch a circumſtance. I therefore went, accompanied by Iddeah, in hopes of ſeeing the funeral ceremony; but before we arrived, the body was removed to the Toopapow. It lay bare, except a piece of cloth round the loins, and another round the neck: the eyes were cloſed: the hands were placed, one over the pit of the ſtomach, and the other upon his breaſt. On a finger of each hand was a ring, made of platted fibres of the cocoa-nut tree, with a ſmall bunch of red feathers. Under the Toopapow a hole was dug, in which, at the end of a month, the corpſe was to be buried. The deceaſed was of the lower claſs; the Toopapow, however, was neat, and offerings of cocoa-nuts and platted leaves lay on the ground.

The dead are ſometimes brought to the Toopapow in wooden coffins, which are not ſhaped like ours, but are ſimply a long box. This cuſtom, Iddeah informed me, they learnt from the Europeans, and is not very common, as making plank is a work of great labour.

Monday, March the 2d. When I landed this morning, MARCH. Monday 2.
I found the inhabitants, that lived near to us, had left their houſes, and retired towards the mountains; and was informed that in the night a water caſk, part of an azimuth compaſs, and Mr. Peckover's bedding, had been ſtolen from the poſt on ſhore; the knowledge of which had cauſed a general alarm. I ſent a meſſage to complain of this theft to Tinah, who did not come near me. About two hours elapſed, during which time I went on board to breakfaſt,

1789. MARCH. and returned, when I ſaw Tinah and Oreepyah, with a number of people, at a houſe at ſome diſtance; and ſoon after they all marched to the eaſtward, paſſing cloſe by our poſt. Oedidee, who was with me, told me that they had intelligence of the thief, and were gone in queſt of him: and in leſs than an hour, news was brought that they had taken him. Shortly after, the whole party appeared, with the water-caſk and compaſs. Tinah had hold of the thief by the arm, and, ſhewing him to me, deſired that I would kill him. The bedding, he ſaid, he had not heard of, but would go in ſearch of it. I applauded him for the pains he had taken in this buſineſs, and explained, with ſome ſucceſs, the injuſtice of ſtealing from us: that if any of our people committed the leaſt offence againſt them, it did not paſs unnoticed; and that friendſhip required on their part, that thoſe who injured us ſhould not be protected by them. Tinah ſtopped me from ſaying more by embracing me, and the whole crowd cried out *Tyo mity* (i. e. good friend.) Tinah then left me, to enquire after the bedding, and I ſent the offender on board, whom I puniſhed with a ſevere flogging. I was glad to find this man was not of Oparre or Matavai.

The fine fruit, called Avee, was juſt coming into ſeaſon: it was likewiſe in ſeaſon at the time of our arrival in October. The bread-fruit trees, I have no doubt, bear all the year round: we have ſeen a ſcarcity of bread-fruit, but have never been wholly without it. Some fern-root was ſhewn to me, which, in ſcarce ſeaſons, is uſed by the natives as bread. It bears a long even-edged leaf, about an inch wide; the taſte ſomewhat reſembled that of a yam. I was informed by our people, that in their walks they ſaw, in many places, patches of Indian corn juſt making

ing their appearance through the ground. This convinces me that the corn taken from Matavai could not have been better diſpoſed of. 1789. MARCH.

Goats are frequently offered for ſale, but I rather diſcouraged the buying of them, for fear of injuring the breed. The natives will not eat them, neither will they taſte the milk; and aſk, with ſome appearance of diſguſt, why we do not milk the ſows? I endeavoured to prevail on Tinah and Iddeah to eat the goats milk, by mixing it with fruit, but they would only try one ſpoonful.

We had began to make preparations for ſailing; and Tinah ſupplied us with a ſufficient ſtock of wood, by ordering trees to be brought down from the country. He had frequently expreſſed a wiſh that I would leave ſome fire-arms and ammunition with him, as he expected to be attacked after the ſhip ſailed; and, perhaps, chiefly on account of our partiality to him: I, therefore, thought it but reaſonable to attend to his requeſt; and I was the more readily prevailed on, as he ſaid his intentions were to act only on the defenſive. This indeed ſeems moſt ſuited to his diſpoſition, which is neither active nor enterpriſing. If Tinah had ſpirit in proportion to his ſize and ſtrength, he would probably be the greateſt warrior in Otaheite: but courage is not the moſt conſpicuous of his virtues. When I promiſed to leave with him a pair of piſtols, which they prefer to muſkets, he told me, that Iddeah would fight with one, and Oedidee with the other. Iddeah has learnt to load and fire a muſquet with great dexterity, and Oedidee is an excellent markſman. It is not common for women in this country to go to war, but Iddeah is a very reſolute woman, of a large make, and has great bodily ſtrength.

Friday

1789. MARCH. Friday 6. Friday the 6th. I ſent Mr. Fryer, the maſter, to ſound Taowne harbour. The knowledge that we intended ſhortly to ſail, having ſpread among the natives, a great many broken iron tools were brought from all parts of the iſland, to be repaired at our forge; and this morning, a meſſenger arrived from Waheatua, the Earee of Tiarraboo, with ſeveral pieces of Spaniſh iron, which he deſired to have made into ſmall adzes. This requeſt was, of courſe, complied with.

CHAP. XI.

Arrival of an Arreoy Woman from Tethuroa.—A preſent delivered by Tinah for his Majeſty.—Other Occurrences to the Time of the Ship's Departure from Otaheite.

FROM the 5th to the 14th of this month, the wind blew conſtantly from between the N W and S W, with a great deal of rain. This was the longeſt continuance of weſterly winds without interruption, that we experienced. On the 13th, ſeveral canoes arrived here, and at Matavai, from Tethuroa: in theſe were a large tribe of the Arreoys, and among them Huheine Moyere, the wife of Oreepyah, who is an Arreoy woman, and remained at Tethuroa after Oreepyah came away. On her arrival, a ceremony was performed, called Hooepippee, which ſeemed to be deſigned as a public viſit to all their friends, who are collected on the occaſion. In this ceremony, there was nothing remarkable: the Arreoy men took their opportunity to plunder the women who were near them, and Iddeah made a preſent of ſome cloth to Huheine Moyere, and a baked hog to the Arreoys. 1789. MARCH.

After this ceremony, a preſent was produced from many of the principal people, for young Otoo, the Earee Rahie; which was received by Iddeah, Tinah being abſent. This preſent conſiſted of five hogs, and forty-eight baſkets filled with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, tarro, and different kinds of puddings. The baſkets were decorated with ſlips of cloth, Friday 13.

1789. MARCH. ſtained with variety of colours, and carried by 24 men, each of whom had a pole on his ſhoulder, at each end of which was a baſket.

I have ſeldom ſpoken of Otoo, who was too young to have any ſhare in the management of affairs, and with whom we were not permitted to have any intercourſe, except ſpeaking to him now and then, acroſs a river; at which times, I did not neglect to ſend the children ſome little preſents, ſo that they always rejoiced to ſee me. I might have been admitted to a nearer acquaintance, if I would have gone with my ſhoulders uncovered, as his parents did, but this I declined. The children do not all live under the ſame roof, the two ſiſters eating and ſleeping in a ſeparate houſe, though at other times, they are generally together.

The iſland Tethuroa may very properly be compared to ſome of our watering places in England, producing a ſimilar effect upon thoſe who viſit it. Many, who went there covered with ſcurf, returned plump and fair, and ſcarce like the ſame people. This alteration for the better, is in a great meaſure to be attributed to the diſcontinuance of the Ava, which Tethuroa does not produce: the cocoa-nut trees, likewiſe, which ſupply them with their only beverage, growing on low ſandy keys, and having their roots below the level of the ſea, may probably have qualities different from the cocoa-nuts of Otaheite; which, with a plenty of fiſh, that at other times they are not accuſtomed to, muſt no doubt contribute to the amendment deſcribed.

Saturday 14. Saturday 14th. I was viſited to-day by a very old man, an uncle to Tupia, the perſon who went from theſe iſlands in the Endeavour, in the year 1769, and who died at Batavia. He appeared to be near 70 years old, and was treated with

with much reſpect by the natives. He made ſeveral enquiries concerning his nephew, and requeſted that when I came again, I would bring his hair. At the time that Tinah mentioned to me his deſire of viſiting England, I aſked what account I could give to his friends, if he ſhould not live to return; to which he replied, that I muſt cut off his hair, and carry it to them, and they would be perfectly ſatisfied. 1789. MARCH.

On the 16th, I was informed, that a ſtop was put to the ſale of hogs, in the diſtrict of Tettaha. Teppahoo, the Earee of that diſtrict, told me that they had very few hogs left there, and that it was neceſſary, for a certain time, to prohibit every perſon from killing or ſelling, that they might have time to breed. I did not think it reaſonable to ſolicit any indulgence on this head: my friends at Matavai and Oparre promiſed to ſupply us, as long as we remained here, though we had conſiderably thinned their ſtock. After our departure, the ſame reſtriction was to take place in theſe diſtricts, and it being delayed on our account, certainly deſerves to be regarded among their acts of friendſhip towards us. Monday 16.

As it was generally known that we were preparing to ſail, a number of the natives from other parts of the iſland were conſtantly with us, and petty thefts were committed, whenever the negligence of our people afforded an opportunity: but no attempt of any conſequence was made.

This evening, Mr. Samwel, my clerk, returned from an excurſion to the mountains, having been two days abſent. He deſcribed the hills to be well clothed with wood, except the tops of the higher mountains, which only produced buſhes and fern. The birds he ſaw, were blue paroquets Thurſday 19.

1789. MARCH. and green doves, except one, which he found burrowing in the ground, and brought to me. This bird was about the ſize of a pigeon, and proved to be a white-bellied peterel, of the ſame kind as thoſe ſeen in high latitudes, which are called ſheerwaters. He likewiſe brought a branch of a plant, like the New Zealand tea-plant, and which, at Van Diemen's land, we had made uſe of for brooms. From the hills he ſaw the iſlands Maitea and Huaheine, which are ſituated nearly in oppoſite directions from Otaheite, and are 70 leagues diſtant from each other.

Friday 27. For ſome days paſt, Tinah had been buſied in getting two *Parais*, or mourning-dreſſes, made, which he intended as a preſent to King George. Being finiſhed, they were this morning hung up in his houſe, as a public exhibition, and a long prayer made on the occaſion; the ſubſtance of which was, that the King of England might for ever remain his friend, and not forget him. When he preſented the *parais* for me to take on board, he could not refrain from ſheding tears. During the ſhort remainder of our ſtay here, there appeared among the natives an evident degree of ſorrow, that we were ſo ſoon to leave them, which they ſhewed by unuſual kindneſs and attention.

We began, this afternoon, to remove the plants to the ſhip. They were in excellent order: the roots had appeared through the bottom of the pots, and would have ſhot into the ground, if care had not been taken to prevent it.

The weather was conſiderably altered for the better, and the trade-wind appeared ſettled. The rainy and bad ſeaſon of the year, may be reckoned to begin towards the end of November, and to continue till near the end of March. During this time, the winds are variable, and often weſ-

terly, though we ſeldom found them to blow ſtrong in that direction. We likewiſe experienced frequent intervals of fine weather; but, during theſe months, ſo open a road as Matavai bay is not a ſafe anchoring-place for ſhips that intend remaining any length of time at Otaheite. 1789. MARCH.

Tueſday the 31ſt. To-day, all the plants were on board, being in 774 pots, 39 tubs, and 24 boxes. The number of bread-fruit plants were 1015: beſides which, we had collected a number of other plants. The *avee*, which is one of the fineſt-flavoured fruits in the world. The *ayyah*, which is a fruit not ſo rich, but of a fine flavour and very refreſhing. The *rattah*, not much unlike a cheſnut, which grows on a large tree, in great quantities: they are ſingly in large pods, from one to two inches broad; and may be eaten raw, or boiled in the ſame manner as Windſor beans, and ſo dreſſed, are equally good. The *orai-ah*, which is a very ſuperior kind of plantain. All theſe I was particularly recommended to collect, by my worthy friend, Sir Joſeph Banks. I had alſo taken on board ſome plants of the *ettow* and *matte*, with which the natives here make a beautiful red colour; and a root called *peeah*, of which they make an excellent pudding. Tueſday 31.

I now made my laſt preſents to ſeveral of my friends, with whom I had been moſt intimate, particularly to Teppahoo. Several people expreſſed great deſire to go with us to England. Oedidee, who was always very much attached to us, ſaid, he conſidered it as his right, having formerly left his native place, to ſail with Captain Cook. Scarce any man belonging to the ſhip was without a *tyo*, who brought to him preſents, chiefly of proviſions for a ſea ſtore.

1789. APRIL. Friday 3. Friday the 3d of April. Tinah and his wife, with his parents, brothers, and ſiſter, dined with me to-day, and, as I meant to ſail early the next morning, they all remained on board for the night. The ſhip was crouded the whole day with the natives, and we were loaded with cocoa-nuts, plantains, bread-fruit, hogs, and goats. In the evening, there was no dancing or mirth on the beach, ſuch as we had been accuſtomed to, but all was ſilent.

Saturday 4. At day-light, we unmoored: the ſtock of the beſt bower anchor was ſo much eaten by the worms, that it broke in ſtowing the anchor: the ſmall bower had an iron ſtock; and in theſe voyages, it is very neceſſary that ſhips ſhould be provided with iron anchor ſtocks. At half paſt ſix, there being no wind, we weighed, and, with our boats and two ſweeps, towed the ſhip out of the harbour. Soon after, the ſea breeze came, and we ſtood off towards the ſea.

The outlet of Toahroah harbour being narrow, I could permit only a few of the natives to be on board: many others, however, attended in canoes, till the breeze came, when I was obliged to leave them. We ſtood off and on, almoſt all the remainder of the day. Tinah and Iddeah preſſed me very ſtrongly to anchor in Matavai bay, and ſtay one night longer; but, as I had already taken leave of moſt of my friends, I thought it better to keep to my intention of ſailing. After dinner, I ordered the preſents which I had reſerved for Tinah and his wife, to be put in one of the ſhip's boats, and, as I had promiſed him fire-arms, I gave him two muſkets, a pair of piſtols, and a good ſtock of ammunition. I then repreſented to them, the neceſſity of their going away, that the boat might return to the ſhip before it was dark; on which they took a moſt affectionate leave

of

of me, and went into the boat. One of their expreſſions, at parting, was "*Yourah no t' Eatua tee eveerah.*" "May "the Eatua protect you, for ever and ever." 1789. APRIL.

All the time that we remained at Otaheite, the picture of Captain Cook, at the deſire of Tinah, was kept on board the ſhip. On delivering it to him, I wrote on the back, the time of the ſhip's arrival and departure, with an account of the number of plants on board.

Tinah had deſired that I would ſalute him, at his departure, with the great guns, which I could not comply with, for fear of diſturbing the plants; but, as a parting token of our regard, we manned ſhip with all hands, and gave him three cheers. At ſun-ſet, the boat returned, and we made ſail, bidding farewell to Otaheite, where for twenty-three weeks we had been treated with the utmoſt affection and regard, and which ſeemed to increaſe in proportion to our ſtay. That we were not inſenſible to their kindneſs, the events which followed more than ſufficiently proves: for to the friendly and endearing behaviour of theſe people, may be aſcribed the motives for that event which effected the ruin of an expedition, that there was every reaſon to hope, would have been completed in the moſt fortunate manner.

To enter into a deſcription of the iſland, or its inhabirants, I look upon as ſuperfluous. From the accounts of former voyages, and the facts which I have related, the character of the people will appear in as true a light, as by any deſcription in my power to give. The length of time that we remained at Otaheite, with the advantage of having been there before, gave me opportunities of making, perhaps, a more perfect vocabulary of the language, than has yet appeared; but I have choſen to defer it for the preſent,

1789. APRIL. ſent, as there is a probability that I may hereafter be better qualified for ſuch a taſk.

We left Otaheite with only two patients in the venereal liſt, which ſhows that the diſeaſe has not gained ground. The natives ſay that it is of little conſequence, and we ſaw ſeveral inſtances of people that had been infected, who, after abſenting themſelves for 15 or 20 days, made their appearance again, without any viſible ſymptom remaining of the diſeaſe. Their method of cure I am unacquainted with; but their cuſtomary diet, and mode of living, muſt contribute towards it. We ſaw a great many people, however, with ſcrophulous habits, and bad ſores: theſe they denied to be produced from any venereal cauſe; and our ſurgeon was of the ſame opinion.

The reſult of the mean of 50 ſets of lunar obſervations, taken by me on ſhore, gives for the Longitude of Point

Venus — — —	210	33	57 E
Capt. Cook, in 1769, places it in —	210	27	30
In 1777, his laſt voyage — —	210	22	28

The tide, in Toahroah harbour, was very inconſiderable, and not regular. The greateſt riſe that I obſerved, was 11 inches; but, what was moſt ſingular, the time of high water did not appear to be governed by the moon, it being at the higheſt, every day, between noon and two o'clock. The variable winds and weather, at this time of the year, has no doubt an influence on the tides: on ſome days, ſcarce any riſe was perceptible.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

At the Iſland Huaheine—A Friend of Omai viſits the Ship.—Leave the Society Iſlands.—A Water-ſpout.—The Iſland Whytootackee diſcovered.—Anchor in Annamooka Road.—Our Parties on Shore robbed by the Natives.—Sail from Annamooka.—The Chiefs detained on board.—Part friendly.

WE ſteered towards the iſland Huaheine, which we got ſight of the next morning. At noon we brought to, near the entrance of Owharre harbour, it not being my intention to anchor. We could ſee every part of the harbour diſtinctly, but my attention was particularly directed to the ſpot where Omai's houſe had ſtood, no part of which was now viſible. It was near three o'clock before any canoes came off to us, for the people on ſhore imagined that the ſhip was coming into the harbour. The firſt that arrived, had three men in it, who brought a few cocoa-nuts. I enquired about the chief, or *Earee Rahie*; and one of the fellows, with great gravity, ſaid, he was the *Earee Rahie*, and that he had come to deſire I would bring the ſhip into the harbour. I could not help laughing at his impudence: however, I gave him a few nails for his cocoa-nuts, and he left us. Immediately after, a double canoe, in which were ten men, came alongſide; among them was a young man, who recollected and called me by my name. Several other canoes

1789. APRIL. Sunday 5.

1789. APRIL. canoes arrived, with hogs, yams, and other proviſions, which we purchaſed. My acquaintance told me that he had lived with our friend Omai. He confirmed the account that has already been given, and informed me, that, of all the animals which had been left with Omai, the mare only remained alive. He ſaid that Omai and himſelf had often rode together; and I obſerved, that many of the iſlanders, who came on board, had the repreſentation of a man on horſeback tattowed on their legs. After the death of Omai, his houſe was broken to pieces, and the materials ſtolen. The fire-arms were at Ulietea, but uſeleſs. I enquired after the ſeeds and plants, and was informed that they were all deſtroyed, except one tree; but of what kind that was, I could not make out from their deſcription. I was much preſſed to take the ſhip into the harbour, and Omai's companion requeſted me to let him go to England. When they found that I would not ſtop among them, they ſeemed jealous of our going to Ulietea, and it appeared to give them ſome ſatisfaction, when I told them that I ſhould not go near that iſland.

The canoes had left us, and we were making ſail, when we diſcovered an Indian in the water, ſwimming towards the ſhore, which in all probability he would not have been able to reach. We took him up, and, luckily, another canoe coming alongſide, we put him in her. The people of the canoe ſaid that the man was inſane; but how he came to be ſwimming ſo far from the land, we could not conjecture. At ſix o'clock we made ſail, and ran all night to the S W, and S W by S, between the iſlands Huaheine and Ulietea. The next morning, I altered the courſe, ſteering more to the weſtward, for the Friendly Iſlands.

Thurſday 9. On the 9th, at nine o'clock in the morning, the weather became

became ſqually, and a body of thick black clouds collected in the eaſt. Soon after, a water-ſpout was ſeen at no great diſtance from us, which appeared to great advantage from the darkneſs of the clouds behind it. As nearly as could judge, it was about two feet diameter at the upper part, and about eight inches at the lower. I had ſcarce made theſe remarks, when I obſerved that it was advancing rapidly towards the ſhip. We immediately altered our courſe, and took in all the ſails, except the foreſail; ſoon after which, it paſſed within ten yards of our ſtern, making a ruſtling noiſe, but without our feeling the leaſt effect from its being ſo near us. The rate at which it travelled, I judged to be about ten miles per hour, going towards the weſt in the direction of the wind. In a quarter of an hour after paſſing us, it diſperſed. I never was ſo near a water-ſpout before: the connection between the column, which was higher than our maſt-heads, and the water below, was no otherwiſe viſible, than by the ſea being diſturbed in a circular ſpace of about ſix yards in diameter, the centre of which, from the whirling of the water round it, formed a hollow; and from the outer parts of the circle, the water was thrown up with much force, in a ſpiral direction, and could be traced to the height of fifteen or twenty feet. At this elevation we loſt ſight of it, and could ſee nothing of its junction with the column above. It is impoſſible to ſay what injury we ſhould have ſuffered, if it had paſſed directly over us. Maſts, I imagine, might have been carried away, but I do not apprehend it would have endangered the loſs of a ſhip.

1789. APRIL.

As we ſailed very near the track made in former voyages, I had little reaſon to expect that we ſhould at this time make any new diſcovery: nevertheleſs, on the 11th, at day-light, land was ſeen to the S S W, at about five leagues diſtance, Saturday 11.

1789. APRIL. which appeared to be an iſland of a moderate height. On the north part was a round hill: the N W part was higheſt and ſteep: the S E part ſloped off to a low point.

The wind had been weſterly ſince the preceding noon, and at the time we ſaw the land, the ſhip was ſtanding to the N W. At ſix, we tacked to the ſouthward, and, as we advanced in that direction, diſcovered a number of low keys, of which at noon we counted nine: they were all covered with trees. The large iſland firſt ſeen had a moſt fruitful appearance, its ſhore being bordered with flat land, on which grew innumerable cocoa-nut and other trees; and the higher grounds beautifully interſperſed with lawns. The wind being light and unfavourable, we endeavoured all day, but without ſucceſs, to get near the land. In the night we had a heavy ſquall, which obliged us to clew up all our ſails, and ſoon after it fell calm.

Sunday 12. On the 12th, the winds were light and variable all day, with calms. At two in the afternoon, we were within three miles of the ſouthernmoſt key, and could ſee a number of people within the reefs. Shortly after, a canoe, in which were four men, paddled off to us, and came alongſide, without ſhewing any ſigns of apprehenſion or ſurpriſe. I gave them a few beads, and they came into the ſhip. One man, who ſeemed to have an aſcendency over the others, looked about the ſhip with ſome appearance of curioſity, but none of them would venture to go below. They aſked for ſome boiled freſh pork, which they ſaw in a bowl, belonging to one of the ſeamen, and it was given them to eat, with boiled plantains. Being told that I was the *Earee* or chief of the ſhip, the principal perſon came and joined noſes with me, and preſented to me a large mother of pearl ſhell,

1789. APRIL.

which hung with platted hair round his neck; this he faſtened round my neck, with ſigns of great ſatisfaction.

They ſpoke the ſame language as at Otaheite, with very little variation, as far as I could judge. In a ſmall vocabulary, that I made whilſt converſing with theſe men, only four words, out of twenty-four, differed from the Otaheite. The name of the large iſland, they told me, was Wytootackee, and the Earee was called Lomakkayah. They ſaid that there were no hogs, dogs, or goats upon the iſland, nor had they yams, or tarro; but that plantains, cocoa-nuts, fowls, bread-fruit, and avees, were there in great abundance. Notwithſtanding they ſaid that no hogs were on the iſland, it was evident they had ſeen ſuch animals; for they called them by the ſame name as is given to them at Otaheite, which made me ſuſpect that they were deceiving me. However, I ordered a young boar and ſow to be put into their canoe, with ſome yams and tarro, as we could afford to part with ſome of theſe articles. I alſo gave to each of them a knife, a ſmall adze, ſome nails, beads, and a looking-glaſs. The latter they examined with great curioſity; but with the iron-work they appeared to be acquainted; calling it *aouree*, which is the common name for iron among the iſlands where it is known.

As they were preparing to leave us, the chief of the canoe took poſſeſſion of every thing that I had given to the others. One of them ſhewed ſome ſigns of diſſatisfaction; but, after a little altercation, they joined noſes, and were reconciled. I now thought they were going to leave the ſhip; but only two of them went into the canoe, the other two purpoſing to ſtay all night with us, and to have the canoe return for them in the morning. I would have treated their confidence with the regard it merited, but it was impoſſible to ſay how

1789. APRIL. far the ſhip might be driven from the iſland in the night. This I explained to them, and they reluctantly conſented to leave us. They were very ſolicitous that ſomebody from the ſhip ſhould go on ſhore with them; and juſt before they quitted us, they gave me a wooden ſpear, which was the only thing, the paddles excepted, they had brought with them in the canoe. It was a common long ſtaff, pointed with the *toa* wood.

The iſland of Wytootackee is about ten miles in circuit; its latitude from 18° 50′ to 18° 54′ S, and longitude 200° 19′ E. A group of ſmall keys, eight in number, lie to the S E, four or five miles diſtant from Wytootackee, and a ſingle one to the W S W; the ſouthernmoſt of the group is in latitude 18° 58′ S. Variation of the compaſs 8° 14′ E.

The people that came off to us did not differ in appearance from the natives of Hervey's Iſlands, ſeen in Captain Cook's laſt voyage, though much more friendly and inoffenſive in their manners. They were tattowed acroſs the arms and legs, but not on the loins or poſteriors, like the people of Otaheite. From their knowledge of iron, they have doubtleſs communication with Hervey's Iſlands, which are not more than eighteen leagues diſtant from them.

In the night, a breeze ſprung up from the ſouth, and we continued our courſe to the weſtward.

Saturday 18. On the 18th, at ſun-ſet, we ſaw Savage Iſland; and in the night, paſſed by to the ſouthward of it.

Tueſday 21. At eleven o'clock in the forenoon of the 21ſt, we ſaw the iſland Caow, from the maſt-head, bearing N W by W ½ W. This iſland is a high mountain, with a ſharp-pointed top, and is the northweſternmoſt of all the Friendly Iſlands. At noon we ſaw it very diſtinctly from the deck, it being then nineteen leagues diſtant from us.

The

1789. APRIL.

The wind being to the ſouthward, we could not fetch Annamooka, at which iſland I intended to ſtop, before the evening of the 23d, when we anchored in the road, in twenty-three fathoms; the extremes of Annamooka bearing E by N and S by E, our diſtance from the ſhore being half a league. In the middle of the day, a canoe had come off to us from the iſland Mango, in which was a chief, named Latoomy-lange, who dined with me. Immediately on our anchoring, ſeveral canoes came alongſide, with yams and cocoa-nuts, but none of the natives offered to come on board, without firſt aſking permiſſion. As yet, I had ſeen no perſon with whom I could recollect to have been formerly acquainted. I made enquiries after ſome of our old friends, particularly the chiefs, but I found myſelf not ſufficiently maſter of the language to obtain the information I wanted. Thurſday 23.

Friday the 24th. Our ſtation being inconvenient for watering, at daylight we weighed, and worked more to the eaſtward, where we anchored in twenty-one fathoms; the extremes of Annamooka bearing N 85° E, and S 33° W; the Sandy bay S 73° E; our diſtance from the ſhore, half a league. Sounded all round the ſhip, and found the ground to be a coarſe coral bottom, but with even ſoundings. Friday 24.

By this time, ſome large ſailing canoes were arrived from different iſlands in the neighbourhood of Annamooka; and an old lame man, named Tepa, whom I had known in 1777, and immediately recollected, came on board. Two other chiefs, whoſe names were Noocaboo and Kunocappo, were with him. Tepa having formerly been accuſtomed to our manner of ſpeaking their language, I found I could converſe with him tolerably well. He informed me, that Poulaho, Feenow, and Tubow, were alive, and at Tongataboo.

1789. APRIL. taboo, and that they would come hither as ſoon as they heard of our arrival, of which he promiſed to ſend them immediate notice. He ſaid that the cattle which we had left at Tongataboo, had all bred, and that the old ones were yet living. He enquired after ſeveral people who were here with Captain Cook. Being deſirous to ſee the ſhip, I took him and his companions below, and ſhewed them the bread-fruit and other plants, at ſeeing which they were greatly ſurpriſed. I made each of them a preſent; and, when they had ſatisfied their curioſity, I invited them to go on ſhore with me in the ſhip's boat.

I took Nelſon with me to procure ſome bread-fruit plants, one of our ſtock being dead, and two or three others a little ſickly. When we landed, there were about two hundred people on the beach, moſt of them women and children. Tepa ſhewed me a large boat-houſe, which, he told me, we might make uſe of; thinking we ſhould have a party on ſhore, as our ſhips had formerly. I went with him in ſearch of water, but could find no better place than where Captain Cook had watered, which is a quarter of a mile inland from the eaſt end of the beach. I next walked to the weſt point of the bay, where ſome plants and ſeeds had been ſown by Captain Cook; and had the ſatisfaction to ſee, in a plantation cloſe by, about twenty fine pine-apple plants, but no fruit, this not being the proper ſeaſon. They told me, that they had eaten many of them, that they were fine and large, and that at Tongataboo there were great numbers.

When I returned to the landing-place, I was deſired to ſit down, and a preſent was brought me, which conſiſted of ſome bundles of cocoa-nuts only. This fell ſhort of my expectations; however, I appeared ſatisfied, and diſtributed beads and trinkets to the women and children near me.

Numerous

Numerous were the marks of mourning with which these people disfigure themselves, such as bloody temples, their heads deprived of most of the hair, and, what was worse, almost all of them with the loss of some of their fingers. Several fine boys, not above six years old, had lost both their little fingers; and some of the men, besides these, had parted with the middle finger of the right hand. 1789. APRIL.

The chiefs went off with me to dinner, and I found a brisk trade carrying on at the ship for yams; some plantains and bread-fruit were likewise brought on board, but no hogs. In the afternoon, more sailing canoes arrived, some of which contained not less than ninety passengers. We purchased eight hogs, some dogs, fowls, and shaddocks. Yams were in great abundance, very fine and large; one yam weighed above forty-five pounds. Among the people that came this afternoon, were two of the name of Tubow, which is a family of the first distinction among the Friendly Islands; one of them was chief of the island Lefooga; with him and Tepa I went on shore to see the wooding place. I found a variety of sizeable trees; but the kind which I principally pitched upon, was the Barringtonia, of Forster. I acquainted Tepa with my intention of sending people to cut wood, which meeting with his approbation, we parted.

On the 25th, at daylight, the wooding and watering parties went on shore. I had directed them not to cut the kind of tree *, which, when Captain Cook wooded here in 1777, blinded, for a time, many of the wood-cutters. They had not been an hour on shore, before one man had an axe stolen from him, and another an adze. Tepa was Saturday 25.

* *Excæcaria Agallocha Linn. Sp. Pl.* called in the Malay Language, *Caju Mata Boota*, which signifies, the tree that wounds the eyes.

applied

1789. APRIL. Sunday 26.

applied to, who got the axe reſtored, but the adze was not recovered. In the evening we completed wooding.

Sunday the 26th. In the morning, Nelſon went on more to get a few plants; but, no principal chief being among the people, he was inſulted, and a ſpade taken from him. A boat's grapnel was likewiſe ſtolen from the watering party. Tepa recovered the ſpade for us; but the croud of natives was become ſo great, by the number of canoes that had arrived from different iſlands, that it was impoſſible to do any thing, where there was ſuch a multitude of people, without a chief of ſufficient authority to command the whole. I therefore ordered the watering party to go on board, and determined to ſail; for I could not diſcover that any canoe had been ſent to acquaint the chiefs of Tongataboo of our being here. For ſome time after the thefts were committed, the chiefs kept away, but before noon, they came on board.

At noon, we unmoored, and at one o'clock, got under ſail. The two Tubows, Kunocappo, Latoomy-lange, and another chief, were on board, and I acquainted them, that, unleſs the grapnel was returned, they muſt remain in the ſhip. They were ſurpriſed, and not a little alarmed. Canoes were immediately diſpatched after the grapnel, which, I was informed, could not poſſibly be brought to the ſhip before the next day, as thoſe who had ſtolen it, immediately ſailed with their prize to another iſland. Nevertheleſs, I detained them till ſun-ſet, when their uneaſineſs and impatience increaſed to ſuch a degree, that they began to beat themſelves about the face and eyes, and ſome of them cried bitterly. As this diſtreſs was more than the grapnel was worth, and I had no reaſon to imagine that they were privy to, or in any manner concerned in the theft,

I could

I could not think of detaining them longer, and called their canoes alongſide. I then told them they were at liberty to go, and made each of them a preſent of a hatchet, a ſaw, with ſome knives, gimblets, and nails. This unexpected preſent, and the ſudden change in their ſituation, affected them not leſs with joy than they had before been with apprehenſion. They were unbounded in their acknowledgments; and I have little doubt but that we parted better friends than if the affair had never happened. 1789. APRIL.

We ſtood to the northward all night, with light winds; and on the next day, the 27th, at noon, were between the iſlands Tofoa and Kotoo. Latitude obſerved 19° 18′ S. Monday 27.

Thus far, the voyage had advanced in a courſe of uninterrupted proſperity, and had been attended with many circumſtances equally pleaſing and ſatisfactory. A very different ſcene was now to be experienced. A conſpiracy had been formed, which was to render all our paſt labour productive only of extreme miſery and diſtreſs. The means had been concerted and prepared with ſo much ſecrecy and circumſpection, that no one circumſtance appeared to occaſion the ſmalleſt ſuſpicion of the impending calamity.

CHAP. XIII.

A Mutiny in the Ship.

1789. APRIL. Monday 27. WE kept near the iſland Kotoo, all the afternoon, in hopes that ſome canoes would come off to the ſhip; but in this I was diſappointed. The wind being northerly, in the evening, we ſteered to the weſtward, to paſs to the ſouth of Tofoa. I gave directions for this courſe to be continued during the night. The maſter had the firſt watch; the gunner the middle watch; and Mr. Chriſtian the morning watch. This was the turn of duty for the night.

Tueſday 28. Tueſday the 28th. Juſt before ſun-riſing, while I was yet aſleep, Mr. Chriſtian, with the maſter at arms, gunner's mate, and Thomas Burkitt, ſeaman, came into my cabin, and ſeizing me, tied my hands with a cord behind my back, threatening me with inſtant death, if I ſpoke or made the leaſt noiſe: I, however, called as loud as I could, in hopes of aſſiſtance; but they had already ſecured the officers who were not of their party, by placing centinels at their doors. There were three men at my cabin door, beſides the four within; Chriſtian had only a cutlaſs in his hand, the others had muſkets and bayonets. I was hauled out of bed, and forced on deck in my ſhirt, ſuffering great pain from the tightneſs with which they had tied my hands. I demanded the reaſon of ſuch violence, but received

ceived no other anſwer than abuſe, for not holding my tongue. The maſter, the gunner, the ſurgeon, Mr. Elphinſtone, maſter's mate, and Nelſon, were kept confined below; and the fore hatchway was guarded by centinels. The boatſwain and carpenter, and alſo the clerk, Mr. Samuel, were allowed to come upon deck, where they ſaw me ſtanding abaft the mizen-maſt, with my hands tied behind my back, under a guard, with Chriſtian at their head. The boatſwain was ordered to hoiſt the launch out, with a threat, if he did not do it inſtantly, *to take care of himſelf.* 1789. APRIL.

When the boat was out, Mr. Hayward and Mr. Hallet, two of the midſhipmen, and Mr. Samuel, were ordered into it. I demanded what their intention was in giving this order, and endeavoured to perſuade the people near me not to perſiſt in ſuch acts of violence; but it was to no effect: "Hold your tongue, Sir, or you are dead this in-"ſtant," was conſtantly repeated to me.

The maſter, by this time, had ſent to requeſt that he might come on deck, which was permitted; but he was ſoon ordered back again to his cabin.

I continued my endeavours to turn the tide of affairs, when Chriſtian changed the cutlaſs which he had in his hand for a bayonet that was brought to him, and, holding me with a ſtrong gripe by the cord that tied my hands, he with many oaths threatened to kill me immediately, if I would not be quiet: the villains round me had their pieces cocked and bayonets fixed. Particular people were called on to go into the boat, and were hurried over the ſide; whence I concluded that with theſe people I was to be ſet adrift: I therefore made another effort to bring about a change, but

1789. APRIL. with no other effect than to be threatened with having my brains blown out.

The boatſwain and ſeamen, who were to go in the boat, were allowed to collect twine, canvas, lines, ſails, cordage, an eight and twenty gallon caſk of water, and Mr. Samuel got 150lbs. of bread, with a ſmall quantity of rum and wine, alſo a quadrant and compaſs; but he was forbidden, on pain of death, to touch either map, ephemeris, book of aſtronomical obſervations, ſextant, time-keeper, or any of my ſurveys or drawings.

The mutineers having forced thoſe of the ſeamen whom they meant to get rid of, into the boat, Chriſtian directed a dram to be ſerved to each of his own crew. I then unhappily ſaw that nothing could be done to effect the recovery of the ſhip: there was no one to aſſiſt me, and every endeavour on my part was anſwered with threats of death.

The officers were next called upon deck, and forced over the ſide into the boat, while I was kept apart from every one, abaft the mizen-maſt; Chriſtian, armed with a bayonet, holding me by the bandage that ſecured my hands. The guard round me had their pieces cocked, but on my daring the ungrateful wretches to fire, they uncocked them.

Iſaac Martin, one of the guard over me, I ſaw, had an inclination to aſſiſt me, and as he fed me with ſhaddock, (my lips being quite parched) we explained our wiſhes to each other by our looks; but this being obſerved, Martin was removed from me. He then attempted to leave the ſhip, for which purpoſe he got into the boat; but with many threats they obliged him to return.

The

The armourer, Joſeph Coleman, and two of the carpenters, M'Intoſh and Norman, were alſo kept contrary to their inclination; and they begged of me, after I was aſtern in the boat, to remember that they declared they had no hand in the tranſaction. Michael Byrne, I am told, likewiſe wanted to leave the ſhip. 1789. APRIL.

It is of no moment for me to recount my endeavours to bring back the offenders to a ſenſe of their duty: all I could do was by ſpeaking to them in general; but it was to no purpoſe, for I was kept ſecurely bound, and no one except the guard ſuffered to come near me.

To Mr. Samuel I am indebted for ſecuring my journals and commiſſion, with ſome material ſhip papers. Without theſe I had nothing to certify what I had done, and my honour and character might have been ſuſpected, without my poſſeſſing a proper document to have defended them. All this he did with great reſolution, though guarded and ſtrictly watched. He attempted to ſave the time-keeper, and a box with my ſurveys, drawings, and remarks for fifteen years paſt, which were numerous; when he was hurried away, with "Damn your eyes, you are well off to "get what you have."

It appeared to me, that Chriſtian was ſome time in doubt whether he ſhould keep the carpenter, or his mates; at length he determined on the latter, and the carpenter was ordered into the boat. He was permitted, but not without ſome oppoſition, to take his tool cheſt.

Much altercation took place among the mutinous crew during the whole buſineſs: ſome ſwore "I'll be damned if "he does not find his way home, if he gets any thing with "him," (meaning me); and, when the carpenter's cheſt was carrying away, "Damn my eyes, he will have a veſ-

"ſel

1789. APRIL. "ſel built in a month." While others laughed at the helpleſs ſituation of the boat, being very deep, and ſo little room for thoſe who were in her. As for Chriſtian, he ſeemed as if meditating deſtruction on himſelf and every one elſe.

I aſked for arms, but they laughed at me, and ſaid I was well acquainted with the people among whom I was going, and therefore did not want them; four cutlaſſes, however, were thrown into the boat, after we were veered aſtern.

The officers and men being in the boat, they only waited for me, of which the maſter at arms informed Chriſtian; who then ſaid—"Come, captain Bligh, your officers and "men are now in the boat, and you muſt go with them; if "you attempt to make the leaſt reſiſtance you will inſtantly "be put to death:" and, without further ceremony, with a tribe of armed ruffians about me, I was forced over the ſide, where they untied my hands. Being in the boat, we were veered aſtern by a rope. A few pieces of pork were thrown to us, and ſome clothes, alſo the cutlaſſes I have already mentioned; and it was then that the armourer and carpenters called out to me to remember that they had no hand in the tranſaction. After having undergone a great deal of ridicule, and been kept ſome time to make ſport for theſe unfeeling wretches, we were at length caſt adrift in the open ocean.

I had with me in the boat the following perſons:

Names.	Stations.
JOHN FRYER - - - -	Maſter.
THOMAS LEDWARD - - -	Acting Surgeon.
DAVID NELSON - - -	Botaniſt

WILLIAM

1789. APRIL.

Names.	Stations.
WILLIAM PECKOVER	Gunner.
WILLIAM COLE	Boatſwain.
WILLIAM PURCELL	Carpenter.
WILLIAM ELPHINSTON	Maſter's Mate.
THOMAS HAYWARD, JOHN HALLET	Midſhipmen.
JOHN NORTON, PETER LINKLETTER	Quarter Maſters.
LAWRENCE LEBOGUE	Sailmaker.
JOHN SMITH, THOMAS HALL	Cooks.
GEORGE SIMPSON	Quarter Maſter's Mate.
ROBERT TINKLER	A boy.
ROBERT LAMB	Butcher.
Mr. SAMUEL	Clerk.

There remained on board the Bounty,

FLETCHER CHRISTIAN	Maſter's Mate.
PETER HAYWOOD, EDWARD YOUNG, GEORGE STEWART	Midſhipmen.
CHARLES CHURCHILL	Maſter at Arms.
JOHN MILLS	Gunner's Mate.
JAMES MORRISON	Boatſwain's Mate
THOMAS BURKITT	Able Seaman.
MATTHEW QUINTAL	Ditto.
JOHN SUMNER	Ditto.
JOHN MILLWARD	Ditto.
WILLIAM M'KOY	Ditto.
HENRY HILLBRANT	Ditto.
MICHAEL BYRNE	Ditto.

1789. APRIL.

Names.	Stations.
WILLIAM MUSPRAT - - -	Ditto.
ALEXANDER SMITH - - -	Ditto.
JOHN WILLIAMS - - - -	Ditto.
THOMAS ELLISON - - - -	Ditto.
ISAAC MARTIN - - - -	Ditto.
RICHARD SKINNER - - -	Ditto.
MATTHEW THOMPSON - -	Ditto.
WILLIAM BROWN - - -	Gardiner.
JOSEPH COLEMAN - - -	Armourer.
CHARLES NORMAN - - -	Carpenter's Mate.
THOMAS M'INTOSH - - -	Carpenter's Crew.

In all 25 hands, and the moſt able men of the ſhip's company.

Having little or no wind, we rowed pretty faſt towards Tofoa, which bore N E about 10 leagues from us. While the ſhip was in ſight ſhe ſteered to the W N W, but I conſidered this only as a feint; for when we were ſent away—"Huzza for Otaheite," was frequently heard among the mutineers.

Chriſtian, the chief of the mutineers, is of a reſpectable family in the north of England. This was the third voyage he had made with me; and, as I found it neceſſary to keep my ſhip's company at three watches, I had given him an order to take charge of the third, his abilities being thoroughly equal to the taſk; and by this means the maſter and gunner were not at watch and watch.

Haywood is alſo of a reſpectable family in the north of England, and a young man of abilities, as well as Chriſtian. Theſe two had been objects of my particular regard and attention, and I had taken great pains to inſtruct them, having

ing entertained hopes, that, as profeſſional men, they would have become a credit to their country. 1789. APRIL.

Young was well recommended, and had the look of an able ſtout ſeaman: he, however, fell ſhort of what his appearance promiſed.

Stewart was a young man of creditable parents, in the Orkneys; at which place, on the return of the Reſolution from the South Seas, in 1780, we received ſo many civilities, that, on that account only, I ſhould gladly have taken him with me: but, independent of this recommendation, he was a ſeaman, and had always borne a good character.

Notwithſtanding the roughneſs with which I was treated, the remembrance of paſt kindneſſes produced ſome ſigns of remorſe in Chriſtian. When they were forcing me out of the ſhip, I aſked him, if this treatment was a proper return for the many inſtances he had received of my friendſhip? he appeared diſturbed at my queſtion, and anſwered with much emotion, "That,—captain Bligh,— "that is the thing;——I am in hell—I am in hell."

As ſoon as I had time to reflect, I felt an inward ſatisfaction, which prevented any depreſſion of my ſpirits: conſcious of my integrity, and anxious ſolicitude for the good of the ſervice in which I had been engaged, I found my mind wonderfully ſupported, and I began to conceive hopes, notwithſtanding ſo heavy a calamity, that I ſhould one day be able to account to my King and country for the misfortune.—A few hours before, my ſituation had been peculiarly flattering. I had a ſhip in the moſt perfect order, and well ſtored with every neceſſary both for ſervice and health: by early attention to thoſe particulars I had, as much as lay in my power, provided againſt any accident,

1789. APRIL. in caſe I could not get through Endeavour Straits, as well as againſt what might befal me in them; add to this, the plants had been ſucceſsfully preſerved in the moſt flouriſhing ſtate: ſo that, upon the whole, the voyage was two thirds completed, and the remaining part, to all appearance, in a very promiſing way; every perſon on board being in perfect health, to eſtabliſh which was ever amongſt the principal objects of my attention.

It will very naturally be aſked, what could be the reaſon for ſuch a revolt? in anſwer to which I can only conjecture, that the mutineers had flattered themſelves with the hopes of a more happy life among the Otaheiteans, than they could poſſibly enjoy in England; and this, joined to ſome female connections, moſt probably occaſioned the whole tranſaction.

The women at Otaheite are handſome, mild and cheerful in their manners and converſation, poſſeſſed of great ſenſibility, and have ſufficient delicacy to make them admired and beloved. The chiefs were ſo much attached to our people, that they rather encouraged their ſtay among them than otherwiſe, and even made them promiſes of large poſſeſſions. Under theſe, and many other attendant circumſtances, equally deſirable, it is now perhaps not ſo much to be wondered at, though ſcarcely poſſible to have been foreſeen, that a ſet of ſailors, moſt of them void of connections, ſhould be led away; eſpecially when, in addition to ſuch powerful inducements, they imagined it in their power to fix themſelves in the midſt of plenty, on one of the fineſt iſlands in the world, where they need not labour, and where the allurements of diſſipation are beyond any thing that can be conceived. The utmoſt, however, that any

any commander could have ſuppoſed to have happened is, that ſome of the people would have been tempted to deſert. But if it ſhould be aſſerted, that a commander is to guard againſt an act of mutiny and piracy in his own ſhip, more than by the common rules of ſervice, it is as much as to ſay that he muſt ſleep locked up, and when awake, be girded with piſtols. 1789. APRIL.

Deſertions have happened, more or leſs, from moſt of the ſhips that have been at the Society Iſlands; but it has always been in the commanders power to make the chiefs return their people: the knowledge, therefore, that it was unſafe to deſert, perhaps, firſt led mine to conſider with what eaſe ſo ſmall a ſhip might be ſurprized, and that ſo favourable an opportunity would never offer to them again.

The ſecrecy of this mutiny is beyond all conception. Thirteen of the party, who were with me, had always lived forward among the ſeamen; yet neither they, nor the meſsmates of Chriſtian, Stewart, Haywood, and Young, had ever obſerved any circumſtance that made them in the leaſt ſuſpect what was going on. To ſuch a cloſe-planned act of villainy, my mind being entirely free from any ſuſpicion, it is not wonderful that I fell a ſacrifice. Perhaps, if there had been marines on board, a centinel at my cabin-door might have prevented it; for I ſlept with the door always open, that the officer of the watch might have acceſs to me on all occaſions, the poſſibility of ſuch a conſpiracy being ever the fartheſt from my thoughts. Had their mutiny been occaſioned by any grievances, either real or imaginary, I muſt have diſcovered ſymptoms of their diſcontent, which would have put me on my guard: but the caſe was

1789. APRIL. far otherwiſe. Chriſtian, in particular, I was on the moſt friendly terms with: that very day he was engaged to have dined with me; and the preceding night, he excuſed himſelf from ſupping with me, on pretence of being unwell; for which I felt concerned, having no ſuſpicions of his integrity and honour.

CHAP. XIV.

Proceed in the Launch to the Iſland Tofoa.—Difficulty in obtaining Supplies there.—Treacherous Attack of the Natives.—Eſcape to Sea, and bear away for New Holland.

MY firſt determination was to ſeek a ſupply of bread-fruit and water at Tofoa, and afterwards to ſail for Tongataboo, and there riſk a ſolicitation to Poulaho, the king, to equip our boat, and grant us a ſupply of water and proviſions, ſo as to enable us to reach the Eaſt Indies. 1789. APRIL.

The quantity of proviſions I found in the boat, was 150lb. of bread, 16 pieces of pork, each piece weighing 2 lb. 6 quarts of rum, 6 bottles of wine, with 28 gallons of water, and four empty barrecoes.

Fortunately it was calm all the afternoon, till about four o'clock, when we were ſo far to windward, that, with a moderate eaſterly breeze which ſprung up, we were able to ſail. It was nevertheleſs dark when we got to Tofoa, where I expected to land; but the ſhore proved to be ſo ſteep and rocky, that we were obliged to give up all thoughts of it, and keep the boat under the lee of the iſland with two oars; for there was no anchorage. Having fixed on this mode of proceeding for the night, I ſerved to every perſon half a pint of grog, and each took to his reſt as well as our unhappy ſituation would allow.

In the morning, at dawn of day, we rowed along ſhore in ſearch of a landing-place, and about ten o'clock we diſcovered Wedneſday 29.

a cove

1789. APRIL. a cove with a ſtony beach, at the N W part of the iſland, where I dropt the grapnel within 20 yards of the rocks. A great ſurf ran on the ſhore; but, as I was unwilling to diminiſh our ſtock of proviſions, I landed Mr. Samuel, and ſome others, who climbed the cliffs, and got into the country to ſearch for ſupplies. The reſt of us remained at the cove, not diſcovering any other way into the country, than that by which Mr. Samuel had proceeded. It was great conſolation to me to find, that the ſpirits of my people did not ſink, notwithſtanding our miſerable and almoſt hopeleſs ſituation. Towards noon, Mr. Samuel returned, with a few quarts of water, which he had found in holes; but he had met with no ſpring, or any proſpect of a ſufficient ſupply in that particular, and had ſeen only the ſigns of inhabitants. As it was uncertain what might be our future neceſſities, I only iſſued a morſel of bread, and a glaſs of wine, to each perſon for dinner.

I obſerved the latitude of this cove to be 19° 41′ S. This is the N W part of Tofoa, the north-weſternmoſt of the Friendly Iſlands.

The weather was fair, but the wind blew ſo ſtrong from the E S E that we could not venture to ſea. Our detention made it abſolutely neceſſary to endeavour to obtain ſomething towards our ſupport; for I determined, if poſſible, to keep our firſt ſtock entire. We therefore weighed, and rowed along ſhore, to ſee if any thing could be got; and at laſt diſcovered ſome cocoa-nut trees; but they were on the top of high precipices, and the ſurf made it dangerous landing: both one and the other we, however, got the better of. Some of the people, with much difficulty, climbed the cliffs, and got about 20 cocoa-nuts, and others ſlung them to ropes, by which we hauled them through the ſurf into the

boat. This was all that could be done here; and, as I found no place ſo ſafe as the one we had left, to ſpend the night at, I returned to the cove, and, having ſerved a cocoa-nut to each perſon, we went to reſt again in the boat. 1789. APRIL.

At daylight, we attempted to put to ſea; but the wind and weather proved ſo bad, that I was glad to return to our former ſtation; where, after iſſuing a morſel of bread and a ſpoonful of rum to each perſon, we landed, and I went off with Mr. Nelſon, Mr. Samuel, and ſome others, into the country, having hauled ourſelves up the precipice by long vines, which were fixed there by the natives for that purpoſe; this being the only way into the country. Thurſday 30.

We found a few deſerted huts, and a ſmall plantain walk, but little taken care of; from which we could only collect three ſmall bunches of plantains. After paſſing this place, we came to a deep gully that led towards a mountain, near a volcano; and, as I conceived that in the rainy ſeaſon very great torrents of water muſt paſs through it, we hoped to find ſufficient for our uſe, remaining in ſome holes of the rocks; but, after all our ſearch, the whole that we collected was only nine gallons. We advanced within two miles of the foot of the higheſt mountain in the iſland, on which is the volcano that is almoſt conſtantly burning. The country near it is covered with lava, and has a moſt dreary appearance. As we had not been fortunate in our diſcoveries, and ſaw nothing to alleviate our diſtreſſes, except the plantains and water abovementioned, we returned to the boat, exceedingly fatigued and faint. When I came to the precipice whence we were to deſcend into the cove, I was ſeized with ſuch a dizzineſs in my head, that I thought it ſcarce poſſible to effect it: however, by the aſſiſtance of Nelſon and others, they at laſt got me down, in a weak condition.

1789. APRIL. condition. Every perſon being returned by noon, I gave about an ounce of pork and two plantains to each, with half a glaſs of wine. I again obſerved the latitude of this place 19° 41′ ſouth. The people who remained by the boat I had directed to look for fiſh, or what they could pick up about the rocks; but nothing eatable could be found: ſo that, upon the whole, we conſidered ourſelves on as miſerable a ſpot of land as could well be imagined.

I could not ſay poſitively, from the former knowledge I had of this iſland, whether it was inhabited or not; but I knew it was conſidered inferior to the other iſlands, and I was not certain but that the Indians only reſorted to it at particular times. I was very anxious to aſcertain this point; for, in caſe there had been only a few people here, and thoſe could have furniſhed us with but very moderate ſupplies, the remaining in this ſpot to have made preparations for our voyage, would have been preferable to the riſk of going amongſt multitudes, where perhaps we might loſe every thing. A party, therefore, ſufficiently ſtrong, I determined ſhould go another route, as ſoon as the ſun became lower; and they cheerfully undertook it.

About two o'clock in the afternoon the party ſet out; but, after ſuffering much fatigue, they returned in the evening, without any kind of ſucceſs.

At the head of the cove, about 150 yards from the waterſide, there was a cave; the diſtance acroſs the ſtony beach was about 100 yards, and from the country into the cove there was no other way than that which I have already deſcribed. The ſituation ſecured us from the danger of being ſurpriſed, and I determined to remain on ſhore for the night, with a part of my people, that the others might have

have more room to reſt in the boat, with the maſter; whom I directed to lie at a grapnel, and be watchful, in caſe we ſhould be attacked. I ordered one plantain for each perſon to be boiled; and, having ſupped on this ſcanty allowance, with a quarter of a pint of grog, and fixed the watches for the night, thoſe whoſe turn it was, laid down to ſleep in the cave, before which we kept up a good fire; yet notwithſtanding we were much troubled with flies and muſquitoes. 1789. APRIL.

Friday, May the 1ſt. At dawn of day, the party ſet out again in a different route, to ſee what they could find; in the courſe of which, they ſuffered greatly for want of water: they, however, met with two men, a woman, and a child: the men came with them to the cove, and brought two cocoa-nut ſhells of water. I endeavoured to make friends of theſe people, and ſent them away for bread-fruit, plantains, and water. Soon after, other natives came to us; and by noon there were thirty about us, from whom we obtained a ſmall ſupply; but I could only afford one ounce of pork, and a quarter of a bread-fruit, to each man for dinner, with half a pint of water; for I was fixed in my reſolution not to uſe any of the bread or water in the boat. MAY. Friday 1.

No particular chief was yet among the natives: they were, notwithſtanding, tractable, and behaved honeſtly, exchanging the proviſions they brought for a few buttons and beads. The party who had been out, informed me of their having ſeen ſeveral neat plantations; ſo that it remained no longer a doubt of there being ſettled inhabitants on the iſland; for which reaſon I determined to get what I could, and to ſail the firſt moment that the wind and weather would allow us to put to ſea.

I was much puzzled in what manner to account to the natives for the loſs of my ſhip: I knew they had too much

1789. MAY. ſenſe to be amuſed with a ſtory that the ſhip was to join me, when ſhe was not in ſight from the hills. I was at firſt doubtful whether I ſhould tell the real fact, or ſay that the ſhip had overſet and ſunk, and that we only were ſaved: the latter appeared to be the moſt proper and advantageous for us, and I accordingly inſtructed my people, that we might all agree in one ſtory. As I expected, enquiries were made about the ſhip, and they ſeemed readily ſatisfied with our account; but there did not appear the leaſt ſymptom of joy or ſorrow in their faces, although I fancied I diſcovered ſome marks of ſurpriſe. Some of the natives were coming and going the whole afternoon, and we got enough of bread-fruit, plantains, and cocoa-nuts for another day; but of water they only brought us about five pints. A canoe alſo came in with four men, and brought a few cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit, which I bought as I had done the reſt. Nails were much enquired after, but I would not ſuffer any to be ſhewn, as they were wanted for the uſe of the boat.

Towards evening, I had the ſatisfaction to find our ſtock of proviſions ſomewhat increaſed; but the natives did not appear to have much to ſpare. What they brought was in ſuch ſmall quantities, that I had no reaſon to hope we ſhould be able to procure from them ſufficient to ſtock us for our voyage. At ſun-ſet, all the natives left us in quiet poſſeſſion of the cove. I thought this a good ſign, and made no doubt that they would come again the next day with a better ſupply of food and water, with which I hoped to ſail without farther delay: for if, in attempting to get to Tongataboo, we ſhould be driven to leeward of the iſlands, there would be a larger quantity of proviſions to ſupport us againſt ſuch a misfortune.

At night, I ſerved a quarter of a bread-fruit and a cocoa-nut to each perſon for ſupper; and, a good fire being made, all but the watch went to ſleep. 1789. MAY.

At day-break, the next morning, I was pleaſed to find every one's ſpirits a little revived, and that they no longer regarded me with thoſe anxious looks, which had conſtantly been directed towards me ſince we loſt ſight of the ſhip: every countenance appeared to have a degree of cheerfulneſs, and they all ſeemed determined to do their beſt. Saturday 2.

As there was no certainty of our being ſupplied with water by the natives, I ſent a party among the gullies in the mountains, with empty ſhells, to ſee what could be found. In their abſence the natives came about us, as I expected, and in greater numbers; two canoes alſo came in from round the north ſide of the iſland. In one of them was an elderly chief, called Macca-ackavow. Soon after, ſome of our foraging party returned, and with them came a good-looking chief, called Egijeefow, or perhaps more properly Eefow, Egij or Eghee, ſignifying a chief. To each of theſe men I made a preſent of an old ſhirt and a knife, and I ſoon found they either had ſeen me, or had heard of my being at Annamooka. They knew I had been with captain Cook, who they enquired after, and alſo captain Clerk. They were very inquiſitive to know in what manner I had loſt my ſhip. During this converſation, a young man, named Nageete, appeared, whom I remembered to have ſeen at Annamooka: he expreſſed much pleaſure at our meeting. I enquired after Poulaho and Feenow, who, they ſaid, were at Tongataboo; and Eefow agreed to accompany me thither, if I would wait till the weather moderated. The readineſs and affability of this man gave me much ſatisfaction.

1789. MAY. This, however, was but of ſhort duration, for the natives began to increaſe in number, and I obſerved ſome ſymptoms of a deſign againſt us. Soon after they attempted to haul the boat on ſhore, on which I brandiſhed my cutlaſs in a threatening manner, and ſpoke to Eefow to deſire them to deſiſt; which they did, and every thing became quiet again. My people, who had been in the mountains, now returned with about three gallons of water. I kept buying up the little bread-fruit that was brought to us, and likewiſe ſome ſpears to arm my men with, having only four cutlaſſes, two of which were in the boat. As we had no means of improving our ſituation, I told our people I would wait till ſun-ſet, by which time, perhaps, ſomething might happen in our favour: for if we attempted to go at preſent, we muſt fight our way through, which we could do more advantageouſly at night; and that in the mean time we would endeavour to get off to the boat what we had bought. The beach was lined with the natives, and we heard nothing but the knocking of ſtones together, which they had in each hand. I knew very well this was the ſign of an attack. At noon, I ſerved a cocoa-nut and a bread-fruit to each perſon for dinner, and gave ſome to the chiefs, with whom I continued to appear intimate and friendly. They frequently importuned me to ſit down, but I as conſtantly refuſed: for it occurred both to Nelſon and myſelf, that they intended to ſeize hold of me, if I gave them ſuch an opportunity. Keeping, therefore, conſtantly on our guard, we were ſuffered to eat our uncomfortable meal in ſome quietneſs.

After dinner, we began by little and little to get our things into the boat, which was a troubleſome buſineſs, on account of the ſurf. I carefully watched the motions of

of the natives, who continued to increaſe in number; and found that, inſtead of their intention being to leave us, fires were made, and places fixed on for their ſtay during the night. Conſultations were alſo held among them, and every thing aſſured me we ſhould be attacked. I ſent orders to the maſter, that when he ſaw us coming down, he ſhould keep the boat cloſe to the ſhore, that we might the more readily embark. 1789. MAY.

I had my journal on ſhore with me, writing the occurrences in the cave, and in ſending it down to the boat, it was nearly ſnatched away, but for the timely aſſiſtance of the gunner.

The ſun was near ſetting, when I gave the word, on which every perſon, who was on ſhore with me, boldly took up his proportion of things, and carried them to the boat. The chiefs aſked me if I would not ſtay with them all night, I ſaid, "No, I never ſleep out of my boat; but in "the morning we will again trade with you, and I ſhall "remain till the weather is moderate, that we may go, "as we have agreed, to ſee Poulaho, at Tongataboo." Maccá-ackavow then got up, and ſaid, "You will not ſleep "on ſhore? then Mattie," (which directly ſignifies we will kill you) and he left me. The onſet was now preparing; every one, as I have deſcribed before, kept knocking ſtones together, and Eefow quitted me. All but two or three things were in the boat, when I took Nageete by the hand, and we walked down the beach, every one in a ſilent kind of horror.

While I was ſeeing the people embark, Nageete wanted me to ſtay to ſpeak to Eefow; but I found he was encouraging them to the attack, and it was my determination, if they had then began, to have killed him for his treache-

rous

1789. MAY. rous behaviour. I ordered the carpenter not to quit me till the other people were in the boat. Nageete, finding I would not ſtay, looſed himſelf from my hold and went off, and we all got into the boat except one man, who, while I was getting on board, quitted it, and ran up the beach to caſt the ſtern faſt off, notwithſtanding the maſter and others called to him to return, while they were hauling me out of the water.

I was no ſooner in the boat than the attack began by about 200 men; the unfortunate poor man who had run up the beach was knocked down, and the ſtones flew like a ſhower of ſhot. Many Indians got hold of the ſtern rope, and were near hauling the boat on ſhore; which they would certainly have effected, if I had not had a knife in my pocket, with which I cut the rope. We then hauled off to the grapnel, every one being more or leſs hurt. At this time, I ſaw five of the natives about the poor man they had killed, and two of them were beating him about the head with ſtones in their hands.

We had no time to reflect, for to my ſurpriſe, they filled their canoes with ſtones, and twelve men came off after us to renew the attack, which they did ſo effectually as nearly to diſable us all. Our grapnel was foul, but Providence here aſſiſted us; the fluke broke, and we got to our oars, and pulled to ſea. They, however, could paddle round us, ſo that we were obliged to ſuſtain the attack without being able to return it, except with ſuch ſtones as lodged in the boat, and in this I found we were very inferior to them. We could not cloſe, becauſe our boat was lumbered and heavy, of which they well knew how to take advantage: I therefore adopted the expedient of throwing overboard ſome clothes, which, as I expected, they ſtopped to pick up;

up; and, as it was by this time almoſt dark, they gave over the attack, and returned towards the ſhore, leaving us to reflect on our unhappy ſituation. 1789. MAY.

The poor man killed by the natives was John Norton: this was his ſecond voyage with me as a quarter-maſter, and his worthy character made me lament his loſs very much. He has left an aged parent, I am told, whom he ſupported.

I once before ſuſtained an attack of a ſimilar nature, with a ſmaller number of Europeans, againſt a multitude of Indians: it was after the death of Captain Cook, on the Morai at Owhyhee, where I was left by Lieutenant King. Yet, notwithſtanding this experience, I had not an idea that the power of a man's arm could throw ſtones, from two to eight pounds weight, with ſuch force and exactneſs as theſe people did. Here unhappily we were without fire-arms, which the Indians knew; and it was a fortunate circumſtance that they did not begin to attack us in the cave; for in that caſe our deſtruction muſt have been inevitable, and we ſhould have had nothing left for it but to ſell our lives as dearly as we could; in which I found every one cheerfully diſpoſed to concur. This appearance of reſolution deterred them, ſuppoſing that they could effect their purpoſe without riſk after we were in the boat.

Taking this as a ſample of the diſpoſition of the natives, there was but little reaſon to expect much benefit by perſevering in the intention of viſiting Poulaho; for I conſidered their good behaviour formerly to have proceeded from a dread of our fire-arms, and which, therefore, was likely to ceaſe, as they knew we were now deſtitute of them: and, even ſuppoſing our lives not in danger, the boat and every thing we had, would moſt probably be taken from us, and thereby

all

1789. MAY. all hopes precluded of ever being able to return to our native country.

We ſet our ſails, and ſteered along ſhore by the weſt ſide of the iſland Tofoa; the wind blowing freſh from the eaſtward. My mind was employed in conſidering what was beſt to be done, when I was ſolicited by all hands to take them towards home: and, when I told them that no hopes of relief for us remained (except what might be found at New Holland) till I came to Timor, a diſtance of full 1200 leagues, where there was a Dutch ſettlement, but in what part of the iſland I knew not; they all agreed to live on one ounce of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, per day. Therefore, after examining our ſtock of proviſions, and recommending to them, in the moſt ſolemn manner, not to depart from their promiſe, we bore away acroſs a ſea, where the navigation is but little known, in a ſmall boat, twenty-three feet long from ſtem to ſtern, deep laden with eighteen men. I was happy, however, to ſee that every one ſeemed better ſatisfied with our ſituation than myſelf.

Our ſtock of proviſions conſiſted of about one hundred and fifty pounds of bread, twenty-eight gallons of water, twenty pounds of pork, three bottles of wine, and five quarts of rum. The difference between this and the quantity we had on leaving the ſhip, was principally owing to our loſs in the buſtle and confuſion of the attack. A few cocoa-nuts were in the boat, and ſome bread-fruit, but the latter was trampled to pieces.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Paſſage towards New Holland.—Iſlands diſcovered in our Route.—Our great Diſtreſſes.—See the Reefs of New Holland, and find a Paſſage through them.

IT was about eight o'clock at night when we bore away under a reefed lug fore-ſail: and, having divided the people into watches, and got the boat in a little order, we returned God thanks for our miraculous preſervation, and, fully confident of his gracious ſupport, I found my mind more at eaſe than it had been for ſome time paſt. 1789. MAY.

At day-break, the gale increaſed; the ſun roſe very fiery and red, a ſure indication of a ſevere gale of wind. At eight it blew a violent ſtorm, and the ſea ran very high, ſo that between the ſeas the ſail was becalmed, and when on the top of the ſea it was too much to have ſet: but we could not venture to take in the ſail, for we were in very imminent danger and diſtreſs, the ſea curling over the ſtern of the boat, which obliged us to bale with all our might. A ſituation more diſtreſſing has, perhaps, ſeldom been experienced. Sunday 3.

Our bread was in bags, and in danger of being ſpoiled by the wet: to be ſtarved to death was inevitable, if this could not be prevented: I therefore began to examine what clothes there were in the boat, and what other things could be ſpared; and, having determined that only two ſuits ſhould be kept for each perſon, the reſt was thrown

1789. MAY. overboard, with ſome rope and ſpare ſails, which lightened the boat conſiderably, and we had more room to bale the water out. Fortunately the carpenter had a good cheſt in the boat, in which we ſecured the bread the firſt favourable moment. His tool cheſt alſo was cleared, and the tools ſtowed in the bottom of the boat, ſo that this became a ſecond convenience.

I ſerved a tea-ſpoonful of rum to each perſon, (for we were very wet and cold) with a quarter of a bread-fruit, which was ſcarce eatable, for dinner: our engagement was now ſtrictly to be carried into execution, and I was fully determined to make our proviſions laſt eight weeks, let the daily proportion be ever ſo ſmall.

At noon, I conſidered our courſe and diſtance from Tofoa to be W N W ½ W 86 miles, latitude 19° 27′ S. I directed the courſe to the W.N W, that we might get a ſight of the iſlands called Feejee, if they laid in the direction the natives had pointed out to me.

The weather continued very ſevere, the wind veering from N E to E S E. The ſea ran higher than in the forenoon, and the fatigue of baling, to keep the boat from filling, was exceedingly great. We could do nothing more than keep before the ſea; in the courſe of which the boat performed ſo well, that I no longer dreaded any danger in that reſpect. But among the hardſhips we were to undergo, that of being conſtantly wet was not the leaſt: the
Monday 4. night was very cold, and at day-light our limbs were ſo benumbed, that we could ſcarce find the uſe of them. At this time I ſerved a tea-ſpoonful of rum to each perſon, from which we all found great benefit.

As I have mentioned before, I determined to keep to the W N W, till I got more to the northward; for I not only

only expected to have better weather, but to ſee the Feejee Iſlands, as I have often underſtood, from the natives of Annamooka, that they lie in that direction. Captain Cook likewiſe conſidered them to be N W by W from Tongataboo. Juſt before noon, we diſcovered a ſmall flat iſland, of a moderate height, bearing W S W, 4 or 5 leagues. I obſerved our latitude to be 18° 58′ S; our longitude was, by account, 3° 4′ W from the iſland Tofoa, having made a N 72° W courſe, diſtance 95 miles, ſince yeſterday noon. I divided five ſmall cocoa-nuts for our dinner, and every one was ſatisfied. 1789. MAY.

A little after noon, other iſlands appeared, and at a quarter paſt three o'clock we could count eight, bearing from S round by the weſt to N W by N; thoſe to the ſouth, which were the neareſt, being four leagues diſtant from us.

I kept my courſe to the N W by W, between the iſlands, the gale having conſiderably abated. At ſix o'clock, we diſcovered three other ſmall iſlands to the N W, the weſternmoſt of them bore N W ½ W 7 leagues. I ſteered to the ſouthward of theſe iſlands, a W N W courſe for the night, under a reefed ſail.

Served a few broken pieces of bread-fruit for ſupper, and performed prayers.

The night turned out fair, and, having had tolerable reſt, every one ſeemed conſiderably better in the morning, and contentedly breakfaſted on a few pieces of yams that were found in the boat. After breakfaſt we examined our bread, a great deal of which was damaged and rotten; this, nevertheleſs, we were glad to keep for uſe. Tueſday 5.

I had hitherto been ſcarcely able to keep any account of our run; but we now equipped ourſelves a little better, by getting a log-line marked, and, having practiſed at

1789. MAY. counting ſeconds, ſeveral could do it with ſome degree of exactneſs.

The iſlands we had paſſed, lie between the latitude of 19° 5′ S and 18° 19′ S, and, according to my reckoning, from 3° 17′ to 3° 46′ W longitude from the iſland Tofoa: the largeſt may be about ſix leagues in circuit; but it is impoſſible for me to be very correct. To ſhow where they are to be found again is the moſt my ſituation enabled me to do. The ſketch I have made, will give a comparative view of their extent. I believe all the larger iſlands are inhabited, as they appeared very fertile.

At noon I obſerved, in latitude 18° 10′ S, and conſidered my courſe and diſtance from yeſterday noon, N W by W ½ W, 94 miles; longitude, by account, from Tofoa 4° 29′ W.

For dinner, I ſerved ſome of the damaged bread, and a quarter of a pint of water.

About ſix o'clock in the afternoon, we diſcovered two iſlands, one bearing W by S 6 leagues, and the other N W by N 8 leagues; I kept to windward of the northernmoſt, and paſſing it by 10 o'clock, I reſumed our courſe to the N W and W N W for the night.

Wedneſday 6. Wedneſday the 6th. The weather was fair and the wind moderate all day from the E N E. At day-light, a number of other iſlands were in ſight from S S E to the W, and round to N E by E; between thoſe in the N W I determined to paſs. At noon a ſmall ſandy iſland or key, two miles diſtant from me, bore from E to S ¼ W. I had paſſed ten iſlands, the largeſt of which I judged to be 6 or 8 leagues in circuit. Much larger lands appeared in the S W and N N W, between which I directed my courſe. Latitude obſerved 17° 17′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday noon N 50° W; diſtance 84 miles; longitude made, by account, 5° 37′ W.

Our

Our allowance for the day was a quarter of a pint of cocoa-nut milk, and the meat, which did not exceed two ounces to each perſon: it was received very contentedly, but we ſuffered great drought. I durſt not venture to land, as we had no arms, and were leſs capable of defending ourſelves than we were at Tofoa. 1789. MAY.

To keep an account of the boat's run was rendered difficult, from being conſtantly wet with the ſea breaking over us; but, as we advanced towards the land, the ſea became ſmoother, and I was enabled to form a ſketch of the iſlands, which will ſerve to give a general knowledge of their extent and poſition. Thoſe we were near, appeared fruitful and hilly, ſome very mountainous, and all of a good height.

To our great joy we hooked a fiſh, but we were miſerably diſappointed by its being loſt in trying to get it into the boat.

We continued ſteering to the N W, between the iſlands, which, by the evening, appeared of conſiderable extent, woody and mountainous. At ſun-ſet, the ſouthernmoſt bore from S to S W by W. and the northernmoſt from N by W ½ W to N E ½ E. At ſix o'clock we were nearly mid-way between them, and about 6 leagues diſtant from each ſhore, when we fell in with a coral bank, on which we had only four feet water, without the leaſt break on it, or ruffle of the ſea to give us warning. I could ſee that it extended about a mile on each ſide of us; but, as it is probable that it may extend much farther, I have laid it down ſo in my ſketch.

I directed the courſe W by N for the night, and ſerved to each perſon an ounce of the damaged bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, for ſupper.

As

1789. MAY. As our lodgings were very miſerable, and confined for want of room, I endeavoured to remedy the latter defect, by putting ourſelves at watch and watch; ſo that one half always ſat up while the other lay down on the boat's bottom, or upon a cheſt, with nothing to cover us but the heavens. Our limbs were dreadfully cramped, for we could not ſtretch them out; and the nights were ſo cold, and we ſo conſtantly wet, that, after a few hours ſleep, we could ſcarce move.

Thurſday 7. At dawn of day, we again diſcovered land from W S W to W N W, and another iſland N N W, the latter a high round lump of but little extent: the ſouthern land that we had paſſed in the night was ſtill in ſight. Being very wet and cold, I ſerved a ſpoonful of rum and a morſel of bread for breakfaſt.

The land in the weſt was diſtinguiſhed by ſome extraordinary high rocks, which, as we approached them, aſſumed a variety of forms. The country appeared to be agreeably interſperſed with high and low land, and in ſome places covered with wood. Off the N E part lay ſome ſmall rocky iſlands, between which and an iſland 4 leagues to the N E, I directed my courſe; but a lee current very unexpectedly ſet us very near to the rocky iſles, and we could only get clear of it by rowing, paſſing cloſe to the reef that ſurrounded them. At this time we obſerved two large ſailing canoes coming ſwiftly after us along ſhore, and, being apprehenſive of their intentions, we rowed with ſome anxiety, fully ſenſible of our weak and defenceleſs ſtate. At noon it was calm and the weather cloudy; my latitude is therefore doubtful to 3 or 4 miles. Our courſe ſince yeſterday noon N W by W, diſtance 79 miles; latitude by account, 16° 29′ S, and longitude by account, from Tofoa, 6° 46′ W. Being conſtantly wet, it was with the utmoſt difficulty I could open a book to write,

and

and I am ſenſible that what I have done can only ſerve to point out where theſe lands are to be found again, and give an idea of their extent. 1789. MAY.

All the afternoon, we had light winds at N N E: the weather was very rainy, attended with thunder and lightning. Only one of the canoes gained upon us, which by three o'clock in the afternoon was not more than two miles off: when ſhe gave over chaſe.

If I may judge from the ſail of theſe veſſels, they are of a ſimilar conſtruction with thoſe at the Friendly Iſlands, which, with the nearneſs of their ſituation, gives reaſon to believe that they are the ſame kind of people. Whether theſe canoes had any hoſtile intention againſt us muſt remain a doubt: perhaps we might have benefited by an intercourſe with them; but in our defenceleſs ſituation, to have made the experiment would have been riſking too much.

I imagine theſe to be the iſlands called Feejee, as their extent, direction, and diſtance from the Friendly Iſlands, anſwers to the deſcription given of them by thoſe Iſlanders. Heavy rain came on at four o'clock, when every perſon did their utmoſt to catch ſome water, and we increaſed our ſtock to 34 gallons, beſides quenching our thirſt for the firſt time ſince we had been at ſea; but an attendant conſequence made us paſs the night very miſerably, for being extremely wet, and having no dry things to ſhift or cover us, we experienced cold and ſhiverings ſcarce to be conceived. Moſt fortunately for us, the forenoon turned out fair, and we ſtripped and dried our clothes. The allowance I iſſued to-day, was an ounce and a half of pork, a teaſpoonful of rum, half a pint of cocoa-nut milk, and an ounce of bread. The rum, though ſo ſmall in quantity, was of the greateſt ſervice. A fiſhing-line was generally Friday 8.

1789. MAY. towing from the ſtern of the boat, but though we ſaw great numbers of fiſh, we could never catch one.

At noon, I obſerved, in latitude 16° 4′ S, and found we had made a courſe, from yeſterday noon, N 62° W, diſtance 62 miles; longitude, by account, from Tofoa, 7° 42′ W.

The land paſſed yeſterday, and the day before, is a group of iſlands, 14 or 16 in number, lying between the latitude of 16° 26′ S and 17° 57′ S, and in longitude, by my account, 4° 47′ to 7° 17′ W from Tofoa. Three of theſe iſlands are very large, having from 30 to 40 leagues of ſea-coaſt.

In the afternoon we cleaned out the boat, and it employed us till ſun-ſet to get every thing dry and in order. Hitherto I had iſſued the allowance by gueſs, but I now made a pair of ſcales, with two cocoa-nut ſhells; and, having accidentally ſome piſtol-balls in the boat, 25 of which weighed one pound, or 16 ounces, I adopted one*, as the proportion of weight that each perſon ſhould receive of bread at the times I ſerved it. I alſo amuſed all hands, with deſcribing the ſituation of New Guinea and New Holland, and gave them every information in my power, that in caſe any accident happened to me, thoſe who ſurvived might have ſome idea of what they were about, and be able to find their way to Timor, which at preſent they knew nothing of, more than the name, and ſome not even that. At night, I ſerved a quarter of a pint of water, and half an ounce of bread, for ſupper.

Saturday 9. Saturday May the 9th. In the morning, a quarter of a pint of cocoa-nut milk, and ſome of the decayed bread, was ſerved for breakfaſt; and for dinner, I divided the meat of four cocoa-nuts, with the remainder of the rotten bread, which was only eatable by ſuch diſtreſſed people.

* It weighed 272 grains.

At

At noon, I obſerved the latitude to be 15° 47′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday N 75° W, diſtance 64 miles; longitude made, by account, 8° 45′ W. 1789. MAY.

In the afternoon, I fitted a pair of ſhrouds for each maſt, and contrived a canvaſs weather cloth round the boat, and raiſed the quarters about nine inches, by nailing on the ſeats of the ſtern ſheets, which proved of great benefit to us.

The wind had been moderate all day, in the S E quarter, with fine weather; but, about nine o'clock in the evening, the clouds began to gather, and we had a prodigious fall of rain, with ſevere thunder and lightning. By midnight we caught about twenty gallons of water. Being miſerably wet and cold, I ſerved to the people a tea-ſpoonful of rum each, to enable them to bear with their diſtreſſed ſituation. The weather continued extremely bad, and the wind increaſed; we ſpent a very miſerable night, without ſleep, except ſuch as could be got in the midſt of rain. The day Sunday 10. brought no relief but its light. The ſea broke over us ſo much, that two men were conſtantly baling; and we had no choice how to ſteer, being obliged to keep before the waves for fear of the boat filling.

The allowance now regularly ſerved to each perſon was one 25th of a pound of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, at eight in the morning, at noon, and at ſun-ſet. To-day I gave about half an ounce of pork for dinner, which, though any moderate perſon would have conſidered only as a mouthful, was divided into three or four.

The rain abated towards noon, and I obſerved the latitude to be 15° 17′ S; courſe N 67° W diſtance 78 miles; longitude made 10° W.

The wind continued ſtrong from S S E to S E, with very ſqually weather, and a high breaking ſea, ſo that we were miſerably wet, and ſuffered great cold in the night.

1789. MAY. Monday the 11th. In the morning at day-break, I ſerved to every perſon a tea-ſpoonful of rum, our limbs being ſo
Monday 11. cramped that we could ſcarce move them. Our ſituation was now extremely dangerous, the ſea frequently running over our ſtern, which kept us baling with all our ſtrength.

At noon, the ſun appeared, which gave us as much pleaſure as in a winter's day in England. I iſſued the 25th of a pound of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, as yeſterday. Latitude obſerved 14° 50′ S; courſe N 71° W, diſtance 102 miles; and longitude, by account, 11° 39′ W from Tofoa.

In the evening it rained hard, and we again experienced
Tueſday 12. a dreadful night. At length the day came, and ſhowed to me a miſerable ſet of beings, full of wants, without any thing to relieve them. Some complained of great pain in their bowels, and every one of having almoſt loſt the uſe of his limbs. The little ſleep we got was no ways refreſhing, as we were covered with ſea and rain. I ſerved a ſpoonful of rum at day-dawn, and the uſual allowance of bread and water, for breakfaſt, dinner, and ſupper.

At noon it was almoſt calm, no ſun to be ſeen, and ſome of us ſhivering with cold. Courſe ſince yeſterday W by N, diſtance 89 miles; latitude, by account, 14° 33′ S; longitude made 13° 9′ W. The direction of our courſe was to paſs to the northward of the New Hebrides.

The wet weather continued, and in the afternoon the wind came from the ſouthward, blowing freſh in ſqualls. As there was no proſpect of getting our clothes dried, I recommended to every one to ſtrip, and wring them through the ſalt water, by which means they received a warmth, that, while wet with rain, they could not have.

This

This afternoon, we ſaw a kind of fruit on the water, which Nelſon told me was the Barringtonia of Forſter; and, as I ſaw the ſame again in the morning, and ſome men of war birds, I was led to believe that we were not far from land. 1789. MAY.

We continued conſtantly ſhipping ſeas, and baling, and were very wet and cold in the night; but I could not afford the allowance of rum at day-break.

Wedneſday the 13th. At noon I had a ſight of the ſun, latitude 14° 17′ S; courſe W by N 79 miles; longitude made 14° 28′ W. All this day, we were conſtantly ſhipping water, and ſuffered much cold and ſhiverings in the night. Wedneſday 13.

Thurſday the 14th. Freſh gales at S E, and gloomy weather, with rain, and a high ſea. At ſix in the morning, we ſaw land, from S W by S eight leagues, to N W by W ½ W ſix leagues, which ſoon after appeared to be four iſlands, one of them much larger than the others, and all of them high and remarkable. At noon, we diſcovered a ſmall iſland and ſome rocks, bearing N W by N four leagues, and another iſland W eight leagues, ſo that the whole were ſix in number; the four I had firſt ſeen bearing from S ½ E to S W by S; our diſtance three leagues from the neareſt iſland. My latitude obſerved was 13° 29′ S, and longitude, by account, from Tofoa, 15° 49′ W; courſe ſince yeſterday noon N 63° W, diſtance 89 miles. At four in the afternoon, we paſſed the weſternmoſt iſland. Thurſday 14.

Friday the 15th. At one in the morning, another iſland was diſcovered, bearing W N W, five leagues diſtance, and at eight o'clock we ſaw it for the laſt time, bearing N E ſeven leagues. A number of gannets, boobies, and men of war birds were ſeen. Friday 15.

Theſe iſlands lie between the latitude of 13° 16′ and

1789. MAY. 14° 10′ S: their longitude, according to my reckoning, 15° 51′ to 17° 6′ W from the iſland Tofoa *. The largeſt iſland I judged to be about twenty leagues in circuit, the others five or ſix. The eaſternmoſt is the ſmalleſt iſland, and moſt remarkable, having a high ſugar-loaf hill.

The ſight of theſe iſlands ſerved only to increaſe the miſery of our ſituation. We were very little better than ſtarving, with plenty in view; yet to attempt procuring any relief was attended with ſo much danger, that prolonging of life, even in the midſt of miſery, was thought preferable, while there remained hopes of being able to ſurmount our hardſhips. For my own part, I conſider the general run of cloudy and wet weather to be a bleſſing of Providence. Hot weather would have cauſed us to have died with thirſt; and probably being ſo conſtantly covered with rain or ſea protected us from that dreadful calamity.

As I had nothing to aſſiſt my memory, I could not then determine whether theſe iſlands were a part of the New Hebrides or not: I believed them to be a new diſcovery, which I have ſince found true; but, though they were not ſeen either by Monſieur Bougainville or Captain Cook, they are ſo nearly in the neighbourhood of the New Hebrides, that they muſt be conſidered as part of the ſame group. They are fertile, and inhabited, as I ſaw ſmoke in ſeveral places.

The wind was at S E, with rainy weather all day. The night was very dark, not a ſtar could be ſeen to ſteer by, and the ſea broke continually over us. I found it neceſſary

* By making a proportional allowance for the error afterwards found in the dead reckoning, I eſtimate the longitude of theſe iſlands to be from 167° 17′ E to 168° 34′ E from Greenwich.

to

to counteract as much as poſſible the effect of the ſoutherly winds, to prevent being driven too near New Guinea; for in general we were forced to keep ſo much before the ſea, that if we had not, at intervals of moderate weather, ſteered a more ſoutherly courſe, we ſhould inevitably, from a continuance of the gales, have been thrown in ſight of that coaſt: in which caſe there would moſt probably have been an end to our voyage. 1789. MAY.

Saturday the 16th. In addition to our miſerable allowance of one 25th of a pound of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, I iſſued for dinner about an ounce of ſalt pork to each perſon. I was often ſolicited for this pork, but I conſidered it more proper to iſſue it in ſmall quantities than to ſuffer it to be all uſed at once or twice, which would have been done if I had allowed it. Saturday 16.

At noon I obſerved, in 13° .33′ S; longitude made from Tofoa, 19° 27′ W; courſe N 82° W, diſtance 101 miles. The ſun breaking out through the clouds, gave us hopes of drying our wet clothes; but the ſunſhine was of ſhort duration. We had ſtrong breezes at S E by S, and dark gloomy weather, with ſtorms of thunder, lightning, and rain. The night was truly horrible, and not a ſtar to be ſeen; ſo that our ſteerage was uncertain.

Sunday the 17th. At dawn of day, I found every perſon complaining, and ſome of them ſolicited extra allowance; which I poſitively refuſed. Our ſituation was miſerable; always wet, and ſuffering extreme cold in the night, without the leaſt ſhelter from the weather. Being conſtantly obliged to bale, to keep the boat from filling, was, perhaps, not to be reckoned an evil, as it gave us exerciſe. Sunday 17.

The

1789. MAY. The little rum we had was of great ſervice: when our nights were particularly diſtreſſing, I generally ſerved a tea-ſpoonful or two to each perſon: and it was always joyful tidings when they heard of my intentions.

At noon, a water-ſpout was very near on board of us. I iſſued an ounce of pork, in addition to the allowance of bread and water; but before we began to eat, every perſon ſtript, and having wrung their clothes through the ſea-water, found much warmth and refreſhment. Courſe ſince yeſterday noon W S W, diſtance 100 miles; latitude, by account, 14° 11′ S, and longitude made 21° 3′ W.

The night was dark and diſmal; the ſea conſtantly breaking oyer us, and nothing but the wind and waves to direct our ſteerage. It was my intention, if poſſible, to make New Holland, to the ſouthward of Endeavour ſtraits, being ſenſible that it was neceſſary to preſerve ſuch a ſituation as would make a ſoutherly wind a fair one; that we might range along the reefs till an opening ſhould be found into ſmooth water, and we the ſooner be able to pick up ſome refreſhments.

Monday 18. Monday, May the 18th. In the morning, the rain abated, when we ſtripped, and wrung our clothes through the ſea-water, as uſual, which refreſhed us greatly. Every perſon complained of violent pain in their bones; I was only ſurpriſed that no one was yet laid up. The cuſtomary allowance of one 25th of a pound of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, was ſerved at breakfaſt, dinner, and ſupper.

At noon, I deduced my ſituation, by account, for we had no glimpſe of the ſun, to be in latitude 14° 52′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday noon, W S W 106 miles; longitude made from

from Tofoa 22° 45′ W. Saw many boobies and noddies, a sign of being in the neighbourhood of land. In the night, we had very ſevere lightning, with heavy rain; and were obliged to keep baling without intermiſſion. 1789. MAY.

Tueſday the 19th. Very bad weather and conſtant rain. At noon, latitude, by account, 14° 37′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday N 81° W, diſtance 100 miles; longitude made 24° 30′ W. With the allowance of bread and water, ſerved half an ounce of pork to each perſon, for dinner. Tueſday 19.

Wedneſday, May the 20th. Freſh breezes E N E with conſtant rain; at times a deluge. Always baling. Wedneſday 20.

At dawn of day, ſome of my people ſeemed half dead: our appearances were horrible; and I could look no way, but I caught the eye of ſome one in diſtreſs. Extreme hunger was now too evident, but no one ſuffered from thirſt, nor had we much inclination to drink, that deſire, perhaps, being ſatisfied through the ſkin. The little ſleep we got was in the midſt of water, and we conſtantly awoke with ſevere cramps and pains in our bones. This morning I ſerved about two tea-ſpoonfuls of rum to each perſon, and the allowance of bread and water, as uſual. At noon the ſun broke out, and revived every one. I found we were in latitude 14° 49′ S; longitude made 25° 46′ W; courſe S 88° W, diſtance 75 miles.

All the afternoon, we were ſo covered with rain and ſalt water, that we could ſcarcely ſee. We ſuffered extreme cold, and every one dreaded the approach of night. Sleep, though we longed for it, afforded no comfort: for my own part, I almoſt lived without it. About two o'clock in the morning we were overwhelmed with a deluge of rain. It fell ſo heavy that we were afraid it would fill the boat, and were obliged to bale with all our might. At dawn of day, I Thurſday 21.

ſerved

1789. MAY. ſerved a larger allowance of rum. Towards noon, the rain abated and the ſun ſhone, but we were miſerably cold and wet, the ſea breaking conſtantly over us; ſo that, notwithſtanding the heavy rain, we had not been able to add to our ſtock of freſh water. Latitude, by obſervation, 14° 29′ S, and longitude made, by account, from Tofoa, 27° 25′ W; courſe, ſince yeſterday noon, N 78° W, 99 miles. I now conſidered myſelf nearly on a meridian with the eaſt part of New Guinea.

Friday 22. Friday, May the 22d. Strong gales from E S E to S S E, a high ſea, and dark diſmal night.

Our ſituation this day was extremely calamitous. We were obliged to take the courſe of the ſea, running right before it, and watching with the utmoſt care, as the leaſt error in the helm would in a moment have been our deſtruction.

At noon it blew very hard, and the foam of the ſea kept running over our ſtern and quarters; I however got propped up, and made an obſervation of the latitude, in 14° 17′ S; courſe N 85° W, diſtance 130 miles; longitude made 29° 38′ W.

The miſery we ſuffered this night exceeded the preceding. The ſea flew over us with great force, and kept us
Saturday 23. baling with horror and anxiety. At dawn of day I found every one in a moſt diſtreſſed condition, and I began to fear that another ſuch night would put an end to the lives of ſeveral, who ſeemed no longer able to ſupport their ſufferings. I ſerved an allowance of two tea-ſpoonfuls of rum; after drinking which, having wrung our clothes, and taken our breakfaſt of bread and water, we became a little refreſhed.

Towards

Towards noon, the weather became fair, but with very little abatement of the gale, and the ſea remained equally high. With ſome difficulty I obſerved the latitude to be 13° 44′ S: courſe ſince yeſterday noon N 74° W, diſtance 116 miles; longitude made 31° 32′ W from Tofoa. 1789. MAY.

The wind moderated in the evening, and the weather looked much better, which rejoiced all hands, ſo that they eat their ſcanty allowance with more ſatisfaction than for ſome time paſt. The night alſo was fair; but being always wet with the ſea, we ſuffered much from the cold. A fine morning, I had the pleaſure to ſee, produce ſome chearful countenances; and, the firſt time for 15 days paſt, we experienced comfort from the warmth of the ſun. We ſtripped, and hung our clothes up to dry, which were by this time become ſo thread-bare, that they would not keep out either wet or cold. Sunday 24.

At noon, I obſerved in latitude 13° 33′ S; longitude, by account, from Tofoa 33° 28′ W; courſe N 84° W, diſtance 114 miles. With the uſual allowance of bread and water for dinner, I ſerved an ounce of pork to each perſon. This afternoon we had many birds about us, which are never ſeen far from land, ſuch as boobies and noddies.

As the ſea began to run fair, and we ſhipped but little water, I took the opportunity to examine into the ſtate of our bread, and found, that according to the preſent mode of iſſuing, there was a ſufficient quantity remaining for 29 days allowance; by which time I hoped we ſhould be able to reach Timor. But as this was very uncertain, and it was poſſible that, after all, we might be obliged to go to Java, I determined to proportion the allowance ſo as to make our ſtock hold out ſix weeks. I was apprehenſive that this would be ill received, and that it would require my utmoſt reſolution Allowance leſſened.

1789. MAY. to enforce it; for, ſmall as the quantity was which I intended to take away, for our future good, yet it might appear to my people like robbing them of life; and ſome, who were leſs patient than their companions, I expected would very ill brook it. However, on my repreſenting the neceſſity of guarding againſt delays that might be occaſioned in our voyage by contrary winds, or other cauſes, and promiſing to enlarge upon the allowance as we got on, they chearfully agreed to my propoſal. It was accordingly ſettled, that every perſon ſhould receive one 25th of a pound of bread for breakfaſt, and the ſame quantity for dinner; ſo that by omitting the proportion for ſupper, we had 43 days allowance.

Monday 25. Monday the 25th. At noon ſome noddies came ſo near to us, that one of them was caught by hand. This bird was about the ſize of a ſmall pigeon. I divided it, with its entrails, into 18 portions, and by a well-known method at ſea, of, *Who ſhall have this* *? it was diſtributed, with the allowance of bread and water for dinner, and eat up bones and all, with ſalt water for ſauce. I obſerved the latitude 13° 32′ S; longitude made 35° 19′ W; courſe N 89° W, diſtance 108 miles.

In the evening, ſeveral boobies flying very near to us, we had the good fortune to catch one of them. This bird is as large as a duck: like the noddy, it has received it's name from ſeamen, for ſuffering itſelf to be caught on the maſts and yards of ſhips. They are the moſt preſumptive proofs of being in the neighbourhood of land of any ſea-fowl we are acquainted with. I directed the bird to be

* One perſon turns his back on the object that is to be divided: another then points ſeparately to the portions, at each of them aſking aloud, "Who ſhall have this?" to which the firſt anſwers by naming ſomebody. This impartial method of diviſion gives every man an equal chance of the beſt ſhare.

killed for ſupper, and the blood to be given to three of the people who were the moſt diſtreſſed for want of food. The body, with the entrails, beak, and feet, I divided into 18 ſhares, and with an allowance of bread, which I made a merit of granting, we made a good ſupper, compared with our uſual fare. 1789. MAY.

Tueſday the 26th. Freſh breezes from the S E, with fine weather. In the morning we caught another booby, ſo that Providence appeared to be relieving our wants in an extraordinary manner. Towards noon, we paſſed a great many pieces of the branches of trees, ſome of which appeared to have been no long time in the water. I had a good obſervation for the latitude, and found our ſituation to be in 13° 41′ S; longitude, by account, from Tofoa, 37° 13′ W; courſe S 85° W, 112 miles. The people were overjoyed at the addition to their dinner, which was diſtributed in the ſame manner as on the preceding evening; giving the blood to thoſe who were the moſt in want of food. Tueſday 26.

To make the bread a little ſavoury, moſt of the people frequently dipped it in ſalt water; but I generally broke mine into ſmall pieces, and eat it in my allowance of water, out of a cocoa-nut ſhell, with a ſpoon; economically avoiding to take too large a piece at a time, ſo that I was as long at dinner as if it had been a much more plentiful meal.

The weather was now ſerene, which, nevertheleſs, was not without its inconveniences, for we began to feel diſtreſs of a different kind from that which we had lately been accuſtomed to ſuffer. The heat of the ſun was ſo powerful, that ſeveral of the people were ſeized with a languor and faintneſs, which made life indifferent. We were ſo fortunate as to catch two boobies in the evening: their ſtomachs

1789. MAY. contained ſeveral flying-fiſh and ſmall cuttlefiſh, all of which I ſaved to be divided for dinner the next day.

Wedneſday 27. Wedneſday the 27th. A freſh breeze at E S E, with fair weather. We paſſed much drift wood this forenoon, and ſaw many birds; I therefore did not heſitate to pronounce that we were near the reefs of New Holland. From my recollection of Captain Cook's ſurvey of this coaſt, I conſidered the direction of it to be N W, and I was therefore ſatisfied that, with the wind to the ſouthward of E, I could always clear any dangers.

At noon, I obſerved in latitude 13° 26′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday N 82° W, diſtance 109 miles; longitude made 39° 4′ W. After writing my account, I divided the two birds with their entrails, and the contents of their maws, into 18 portions, and, as the prize was a very valuable one, it was divided as before, by calling out *Who ſhall have this?* ſo that to-day, with the allowance of a 25th of a pound of bread at breakfaſt, and another at dinner, with the proportion of water, I was happy to ſee that every perſon thought he had feaſted.

In the evening, we ſaw a gannet; and the clouds remained ſo fixed in the weſt, that I had little doubt of our being near the land. The people, after taking their allowance of water for ſupper, amuſed themſelves with converſing on the probability of what we ſhould find.

Thurſday 28. Thurſday the 28th. At one in the morning, the perſon at the helm heard the ſound of breakers, and I no ſooner lifted up my head, than I ſaw them cloſe under our lee, not more than a quarter of a mile diſtant from us. I immediately hauled on a wind to the N N E, and in ten minutes time we could neither ſee nor hear them.

I have

I have already mentioned my reaſon for making New Holland ſo far to the ſouthward: for I never doubted of numerous openings in the reef, through which I could have acceſs to the ſhore: and, knowing the inclination of the coaſt to be to the N W, and the wind moſtly to the ſouthward of E, I could with eaſe range ſuch a barrier of reefs till I ſhould find a paſſage, which now became abſolutely neceſſary, without a moment's loſs of time. The idea of getting into ſmooth water, and finding refreſhments, kept my people's ſpirits up: their joy was very great after we had got clear of the breakers, to which we had approached much nearer than I thought was poſſible, without firſt diſcovering them. 1789. MAY.

In the morning, at day-light, we could ſee nothing of the land or of the reefs. We bore away again, and at nine o'clock, ſaw the reefs. The ſea broke furiouſly over every part, and we had no ſooner got near to them, than the wind came at E, ſo that we could only lie along the line of the breakers; within which we ſaw the water ſo ſmooth, that every perſon already anticipated the heart-felt ſatisfaction he ſhould receive, as ſoon as we could get within them. I now found we were embayed, for we could not lie clear with the ſails, the wind having backed againſt us; and the ſea ſet in ſo heavy towards the reef, that our ſituation was become unſafe. We could effect but little with the oars, having ſcarce ſtrength to pull them; and I began to apprehend that we ſhould be obliged to attempt puſhing over the reef. Even this I did not deſpair of effecting with ſucceſs, when happily we diſcovered a break in the reef, about one mile from us, and at the ſame time an iſland of a moderate height within it, nearly in the ſame direction, bearing W ½ N. I entered the paſſage with a ſtrong ſtream running Friday 29.

1789. MAY. ning to the weſtward, and found it about a quarter of a mile broad, with every appearance of deep water.

On the outſide, the reef inclined to the N E for a few miles, and from thence to the N W: on the ſouth ſide of the entrance, it inclined to the S S W as far as I could ſee it; and I conjecture that a ſimilar paſſage to this which we now entered, may be found near the breakers that I firſt diſcovered, which are 23 miles S of this channel.

I did not recollect what latitude Providential channel * lies in, but I conſidered it to be within a few miles of this, which is ſituate in 12° 51′ S latitude.

Being now happily within the reefs, and in ſmooth water, I endeavoured to keep near them to try for fiſh; but the tide ſet us to the N W, I therefore bore away in that direction, and, having promiſed to land on the firſt convenient ſpot we could find, all our paſt hardſhips ſeemed already to be forgotten.

At noon, I had a good obſervation, by which our latitude was 12° 46′ S, whence the foregoing ſituations may be conſidered as determined with ſome exactneſs. The iſland firſt ſeen bore W S W five leagues. This, which I have called the iſland Direction, will in fair weather always ſhew the channel, from which it bears due W, and may be ſeen as ſoon as the reefs, from a ſhip's maſt-head: it lies in the latitude of 12° 51′ S. Theſe, however, are marks too ſmall for a ſhip to hit, unleſs it can hereafter be aſcertained that paſſages through the reef are numerous along the coaſt, which I am inclined to think they are, in which caſe there would be little riſk, even if the wind was directly on the ſhore.

* Providential Channel is laid down by Captain Cook, in 12° 34′ S, longitude 143° 33′ E.

My

My longitude, made by dead reckoning, from the iſland Tofoa to our paſſage through the reef, is 40° 10′ W. Providential channel, I imagine, muſt lie very nearly under the ſame meridian with our paſſage; by which it appears we had out-run our reckoning 1° 9′. 1789. MAY.

We now returned God thanks for his gracious protection, and with much content took our miſerable allowance of a 25th of a pound of bread, and a quarter of a pint of water, for dinner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

Progreſs to the Northward, along the Coaſt of New Holland.—Land on different Iſlands, in ſearch of Supplies.

1789. MAY. AS we advanced within the reefs, the coaſt began to ſhew itſelf very diſtinctly, in a variety of high and low land; ſome parts of which were covered with wood. In our way towards the ſhore, we fell in with a point of a reef which is connected with that towards the ſea, and here we came to a grapnel, and tried to catch fiſh, but had no ſucceſs. The iſland Direction at this time bore S three or four leagues. Two iſlands lay about four miles to the W by N, and appeared eligible for a reſting-place, if for nothing more; but on our approach to the neareſt iſland, it proved to be only a heap of ſtones, and its ſize too inconſiderable to ſhelter the boat. We therefore proceeded to the next, which was cloſe to it and towards the main. On the N W ſide of this, I found a bay and a fine ſandy point to land at. Our diſtance was about a quarter of a mile from a projecting part of the main, which bore from S W by S, to N N W ½ W. We landed to examine if there were any ſigns of the natives being near us: we ſaw ſome old fire-places, but nothing to make me apprehend that this would be an unſafe ſituation for the night. Every one was anxious to find ſomething to eat, and it was ſoon diſcovered that there were oyſters on the rocks, for the tide was out; but it was nearly dark,

dark, and only a few could be gathered. I determined therefore to wait till the morning, when I ſhould better know how to proceed, and I directed that one half of our company ſhould ſleep on ſhore, and the other half in the boat. We would gladly have made a fire, but, as we could not accompliſh it, we took our reſt for the night, which happily was calm and undiſturbed. 1789. MAY

Friday the 29th. The dawn of day brought greater ſtrength and ſpirits to us than I expected; for, notwithſtanding every one was very weak, there appeared ſtrength ſufficient remaining to make me conceive the moſt favourable hopes of our being able to ſurmount the difficulties we might yet have to encounter. Friday 29.

As there were no appearances to make me imagine that any of the natives were near us, I ſent out parties in ſearch of ſupplies, while others of the people were putting the boat in order, that we might be ready to go to ſea in caſe any unforeſeen cauſe ſhould make it neceſſary. One of the gudgeons of the rudder had come out in the courſe of the night, and was loſt. This, if it had happened at ſea, might have been attended with the moſt ſerious conſequences, as the management of the boat could not have been ſo nicely preſerved as theſe very heavy ſeas required. I had been apprehenſive of this accident, and had in ſome meaſure prepared for it, by having grummets fixed on each quarter of the boat for oars; but our utmoſt readineſs in uſing them, would not probably have ſaved us. It appears, therefore, a providential circumſtance, that it happened in a place of ſafety, and that it was in our power to remedy the defect; for by great good luck we found a large ſtaple in the boat, which anſwered the purpoſe.

1789. MAY. The parties returned, highly rejoiced at having found plenty of oyſters and freſh water. I had alſo made a fire, by the help of a ſmall magnifying glaſs; and, what was ſtill more fortunate, we found among the few things which had been thrown into the boat and ſaved, a piece of brimſtone and a tinder-box, ſo that I ſecured fire for the future.

One of the people had been ſo provident as to bring away with him from the ſhip, a copper pot: by being in poſſeſſion of this article we were enabled to make a proper uſe of the ſupply we now obtained; for, with a mixture of bread, and a little pork, we made a ſtew that might have been reliſhed by people of far more delicate appetites, and of which each perſon received a full pint.

The general complaints of diſeaſe among us, were a dizzineſs in the head, great weakneſs of the joints, and violent teneſmus; moſt of us having had no evacuation by ſtool ſince we left the ſhip. I had conſtantly a ſevere pain at my ſtomach; but none of our complaints were alarming: on the contrary, every one retained marks of ſtrength, that, with a mind poſſeſſed of a tolerable ſhare of fortitude, ſeemed able to bear more fatigue than I imagined we ſhould have to undergo in our voyage to Timor.

As I would not allow the people to expoſe themſelves to the heat of the ſun, it being near noon, every one took his allotment of earth where it was ſhaded by the buſhes, for a ſhort ſleep.

The oyſters which we found, grew ſo faſt to the rocks, that it was with difficulty they could be broken off; and at length we diſcovered it to be the moſt expeditious way to open them where they were fixed. They were of a good ſize,

ſize, and well taſted. To add to this happy circumſtance, in the hollow of the land there grew ſome wire graſs, which indicated a moiſt ſituation. On forcing a ſtick, about three feet long, into the ground, we found water, and with little trouble dug a well, which produced as much as our occaſions required. It was very good, but I could not determine if it was a ſpring or not. We were not obliged to make the well deep, for it flowed as faſt as we emptied it; which, as the ſoil was apparently too looſe to retain water from the rains, renders it probable to be a ſpring. On the ſouth ſide of the iſland likewiſe, we found a ſmall run of good water. 1789. MAY.

Beſides places where fires had been made, there were other ſigns of the natives ſometimes reſorting to this iſland. I ſaw two ill-conſtructed huts or wigwams, which had only one ſide looſely covered; and a pointed ſtick was found, about three feet long, with a ſlit in the end of it, to fling ſtones with; the ſame as the natives of Van Diemen's land uſe.

The track of ſome animal was very diſcernible, and Nelſon agreed with me that it was the Kanguroo; but whether theſe animals ſwim over from the main land, or are brought here by the natives to breed, it is impoſſible to determine. The latter is not improbable; as they may be taken with leſs difficulty in a confined ſpot like this, than on the continent.

The iſland is about a league in circuit: it is a high lump of rocks and ſtones covered with wood; but the trees are ſmall, the ſoil, which is very indifferent and ſandy, being barely ſufficient to produce them. The trees that came within our knowledge were the manchineal and a ſpecies of purow: alſo ſome palm-trees, the tops of which

1789. MAY. we cut down, and the ſoft interior part or heart of them was ſo palatable that it made a good addition to our meſs. Nelſon diſcovered ſome fern-roots, which I thought might be good roaſted, as a ſubſtitute for bread, but in this I was miſtaken: it however was very ſerviceable in its natural ſtate to allay thirſt, and on that account I directed a quantity to be collected to take into the boat. Many pieces of cocoa-nut ſhells and huſk were found about the ſhore, but we could find no cocoa-nut trees, neither did I ſee any on the main.

I had cautioned the people not to touch any kind of berry or fruit that they might find; yet they were no ſooner out of my ſight than they began to make free with three different kinds, that grew all over the iſland, eating without any reſerve. The ſymptoms of having eaten too much, began at laſt to frighten ſome of them; but on queſtioning others, who had taken a more moderate allowance, their minds were a little quieted. The others, however, became equally alarmed in their turn, dreading that ſuch ſymptoms would come on, and that they were all poiſoned, ſo that they regarded each other with the ſtrongeſt marks of apprehenſion, uncertain what would be the iſſue of their imprudence. Fortunately the fruit proved wholeſome and good. One ſort grew on a ſmall delicate kind of vine; they were the ſize of a large gooſeberry, and very like in ſubſtance, but had only a ſweet taſte; the ſkin was a pale red, ſtreaked with yellow the long way of the fruit: it was pleaſant and agreeable. Another kind grew on buſhes, like that which is called the ſea-ſide grape in the Weſt Indies; but the fruit was very different, being more like elder-berries, and grew in cluſters in the ſame manner.

manner. The third ſort was a black-berry; this was not in ſuch plenty as the others, and reſembled a bullace, or large kind of ſloe, both in ſize and taſte. When I ſaw that theſe fruits were eaten by the birds, I no longer doubted of their being wholeſome, and thoſe who had already tried the experiment, not finding any bad effect, made it a certainty that we might eat of them without danger. 1789. MAY.

Wild pigeons, parrots, and other birds, were about the ſummit of the iſland, but, having no fire-arms, relief of that kind was not to be expected, unleſs we ſhould find ſome unfrequented ſpot where the birds were ſo tame that we might take them with our hands.

The ſhore of this iſland is very rocky, except the place at which we landed, and here I picked up many pieces of pumice-ſtone. On the part of the main neareſt to us, were ſeveral ſandy bays, which at low-water became an extenſive rocky flat. The country had rather a barren appearance, except in a few places where it was covered with wood. A remarkable range of rocks lay a few miles to the S W, and a high peaked hill ſeemed to terminate the coaſt towards the ſea, with iſlands to the ſouthward. A high fair cape ſhowed the direction of the coaſt to the N W, about ſeven leagues diſtant; and two ſmall iſles lay three or four leagues to the northward of our preſent ſtation.

I ſaw a few bees or waſps, and ſeveral lizards; and the black-berry buſhes were full of ants neſts, webbed like a ſpider's, but ſo cloſe and compact as not to admit the rain. A trunk of a tree, about 50 feet long, lay on the beach; from which I conclude that a heavy ſea ſets in here, with a northerly wind.

This day being the anniverſary of the reſtoration of king Charles

1789. MAY. Charles the Second, and the name not being inapplicable to our preſent ſituation (for we were reſtored to freſh life and ſtrength), I named this Reſtoration Iſland; for I thought it probable that captain Cook might not have taken notice of it. The other names which I have preſumed to give the different parts of the coaſt, are meant only to ſhow my route more diſtinctly.

At noon, I obſerved the latitude of the iſland to be 12° 39′ S; our courſe having been N 66° W, diſtance 18 miles from yeſterday noon. The wind was at E S E, with very fine weather.

In the afternoon, I ſent parties out again to gather oyſters, with which and ſome of the inner part of the palm-top, we made another good ſtew for ſupper, each perſon receiving a full pint and a half; but I refuſed bread to this meal, for I conſidered that our wants might yet be very great, and was intent on ſaving our principal ſupport whenever it was in my power. After ſupper, we again divided, and thoſe who were on ſhore ſlept by a good fire.

Saturday 30. Saturday, May the 30th. In the morning, I diſcovered a viſible alteration in our company for the better, and I ſent them away again to gather oyſters. We had now only two pounds of pork left. This article, which I could not keep under lock and key as I did the bread, had been pilfered by ſome inconſiderate perſon, but every one denied having any knowledge of this act; I therefore reſolved to put it out of their power for the future, by ſharing what remained, for our dinner. While the party was out picking up oyſters, I got the boat in readineſs for ſea, and filled all our water veſſels, which amounted to nearly 60 gallons.

The party being returned, dinner was ſoon ready, which was

was as plentiful a meal as the ſupper on the preceding even- 1789. MAY.
ing, and with the pork I gave an allowance of bread. As it was not yet noon, I ſent the people once more to gather oyſters for a ſea ſtore, recommending to them to be as diligent as poſſible, for that I was determined to ſail in the afternoon.

At noon, I again obſerved the latitude 12° 39′ S; it was then high-water, the tide had riſen three feet, but I could not be certain from whence the flood came. I deduce the time of high-water at full and change to be ten minutes paſt ſeven in the morning.

Early in the afternoon, the people returned with the few oyſters that they had collected, and every thing was put into the boat. I then examined the quantity of bread remaining, and found 38 days allowance, according to the laſt mode of iſſuing a 25th of a pound at breakfaſt and at dinner.

Fair weather, and moderate breezes at E S E and S E.

Being ready for ſea, I directed every perſon to attend prayers. At four o'clock we were preparing to embark; when about twenty of the natives appeared, running and hallooing to us, on the oppoſite ſhore. They were each armed with a ſpear or lance, and a ſhort weapon which they carried in their left hand: they made ſigns for us to come to them. On the top of the hills we ſaw the heads of many more: whether theſe were their wives and children, or others who waited for our landing, meaning not to ſhow themſelves, leſt we might be intimidated, I cannot ſay; but, as I found we were diſcovered to be on the coaſt, I thought it prudent to make the beſt of our way, for fear of being purſued by canoes; though, from the accounts of captain

1789. MAY. Cook, the chance was that there were very few if any of conſequence on any part of the coaſt. I paſſed theſe people as near as I could with ſafety: they were naked, and apparently black, and their hair or wool buſhy and ſhort.

I directed my courſe within two ſmall iſlands that lie to the north of Reſtoration Iſland, paſſing between them and the main land, towards Fair Cape, with a ſtrong tide in my favour; ſo that I was abreaſt of it by eight o'clock. The coaſt we paſſed was high and woody. As I could ſee no land without Fair Cape, I concluded that the coaſt inclined to the N W and W N W: I therefore ſteered more towards the W; but by eleven o'clock at night, we met with low land, which inclined to the N E; and at three o'clock in the morning I found that we were embayed, which obliged us to ſtand back for a ſhort time to the ſouthward.

Sunday 31. Sunday the 31ſt. At day-break, I was exceedingly ſurpriſed to find the appearance of the country entirely changed, as if in the courſe of the night we had been tranſported to another part of the world; for we had now a low ſandy coaſt in view, with very little verdure, or any thing to indicate that it was at all habitable to a human being, except a few patches of ſmall trees or bruſh-wood.

Many ſmall iſlands were in ſight to the N E, about ſix miles diſtant. The E part of the main bore N four miles, and Fair Cape S S E five or ſix leagues. I took the channel between the neareſt iſland and the main land, which were about one mile apart, leaving all the iſlands on the ſtarboard ſide. Some of theſe were very pretty ſpots, covered with wood, and well ſituated for fiſhing: large ſhoals of fiſh

fiſh were about us, but we could not catch any. In paſſing this ſtrait we ſaw another party of Indians, ſeven in number, running towards us, ſhouting and making ſigns for us to land. Some of them waved green branches of the buſhes which were near them, as a token of friendſhip; but ſome of their other motions were leſs friendly. A little farther off, we ſaw a larger party, who likewiſe came towards us. I therefore determined not to land, though I much wiſhed to have had ſome intercourſe with theſe people. Nevertheleſs I laid the boat cloſe to the rocks, and beckoned to them to approach; but none of them would come within 200 yards of us. They were armed in the ſame manner as the people we had ſeen from Reſtoration Iſland; they were ſtark naked, their colour black, with ſhort buſhy hair or wool, and in their appearance were ſimilar to them in every reſpect. An iſland of a good height bore N ½ W, four miles from us, at which I reſolved to land, and from thence to take a look at the coaſt. At this iſle we arrived about eight o'clock in the morning. The ſhore was rocky, but the water was ſmooth, and we landed without difficulty. I ſent two parties out, one to the northward, and the other to the ſouthward, to ſeek for ſupplies, and others I ordered to ſtay by the boat. On this occaſion, fatigue and weakneſs ſo far got the better of their ſenſe of duty, that ſome of the people expreſſed their diſcontent at having worked harder than their companions, and declared that they would rather be without their dinner than go in ſearch of it. One perſon, in particular, went ſo far as to tell me, with a mutinous look, that he was as good a man as myſelf. It was not poſſible for me to judge where this might have an end, if not ſtopped in time; therefore to prevent ſuch diſputes in future, I determined either to pre- 1789. MAY.

1789. MAY. ſerve my command, or die in the attempt: and, ſeizing a cutlaſs, I ordered him to take hold of another and defend himſelf; on which he called out that I was going to kill him, and immediately made conceſſions. I did not allow this to interfere further with the harmony of the boat's crew, and every thing ſoon became quiet.

The parties continued collecting what they could find, which were ſome fine oyſters and clams, and a few ſmall dog-fiſh that were caught in the holes of the rocks. We alſo found ſome rain-water in the hollow of the rocks, on the north part of the iſland, ſo that of this eſſential article we were again ſo fortunate as to obtain a full ſupply.

After regulating the mode of proceeding, I walked to the higheſt part of the iſland, to conſider our route for the night. To my ſurpriſe, no more of the main land could be ſeen here than from below, the northernmoſt part in ſight, which was full of ſand-hills, bearing W by N, about three leagues. Except the iſles to the E S E and S, that we had paſſed, I could only diſcover a ſmall key N W by N. As this was conſiderably farther from the main than the ſpot on which we were at preſent, I judged it would be a more ſecure reſting-place for the night; for here we were liable to an attack, if the Indians had canoes, as they undoubtedly muſt have obſerved our landing. My mind being made up on this point, I returned, after taking a particular look at the iſland we were on, which I found only to produce a few buſhes, and ſome coarſe graſs; the extent of the whole not being two miles in circuit. On the north ſide, in a ſandy bay, I ſaw an old canoe, about 33 feet long, lying bottom upwards, and half buried in the beach. It was made of three pieces, the bottom entire, to which the ſides were ſewed in the common way. It had a ſharp projecting prow rudely carved,

carved, in reſemblance of the head of a fiſh; the extreme breadth was about three feet, and I imagine it was capable of carrying 20 men. The diſcovery of ſo large a canoe, confirmed me in the purpoſe of ſeeking a more retired place for our night's lodging. 1789. MAY.

At noon, the parties were all returned, but had found much difficulty in gathering the oyſters, from their cloſe adherence to the rocks, and the clams were ſcarce: I therefore ſaw, that it would be of little uſe to remain longer in this place, as we ſhould not be able to collect more than we could eat. I named this Sunday Iſland: it lies N by W ½ W from Reſtoration Iſland; the latitude, by a good obſervation, 11° 58′ S.

We had a freſh breeze at S E by S, with fair weather. At two o'clock in the afternoon, we dined; each perſon having a full pint and a half of ſtewed oyſters and clams, thickened with ſmall beans, which Nelſon informed me were a ſpecies of Dolichos. Having eaten heartily, and completed our water, I waited to determine the time of high-water, which I found to be at three o'clock, and the riſe of the tide about five feet. According to this, it is high-water on the full and change at 19 minutes paſt 9 in the morning: I obſerved the flood to come from the ſouthward, though at Reſtoration Iſland, I thought it came from the northward. I think captain Cook mentions that he found great irregularity in the ſet of the flood on this coaſt.

We ſteered for the key ſeen in the N W by N, where we arrived juſt at dark, but found it ſo ſurrounded by a reef of rocks, that I could not land without danger of ſtaving the boat; and on that account we came to a grapnel for the night.

Monday, June the 1ſt. At dawn of day, we got on ſhore, JUNE. Monday 1.

1789. JUNE. and tracked the boat into ſhelter; for the wind blowing freſh without, and the ground being rocky, it was not ſafe to truſt her at a grapnel, leſt ſhe ſhould be blown to ſea: I was, therefore, obliged to let her ground in the courſe of the ebb. From appearances, I expected that if we remained till night we ſhould meet with turtle, as we diſcovered recent tracks of them. Innumerable birds of the noddy kind made this iſland their reſting-place; ſo that we had reaſon to flatter ourſelves with hopes of getting ſupplies in greater abundance than it had hitherto been in our power. Our ſituation was at leaſt four leagues diſtant from the main. We were on the north-weſternmoſt of four ſmall keys, which were ſurrounded by a reef of rocks connected by ſand-banks, except between the two northernmoſt; and there likewiſe it was dry at low water; the whole forming a lagoon iſland, into which the tide flowed: at this entrance I kept the boat.

As uſual, I ſent parties away in ſearch of ſupplies, but, to our great diſappointment, we could only get a few clams and ſome dolichos: with theſe, and the oyſters we had brought from Sunday Iſland, I made up a meſs for dinner, with the addition of a ſmall quantity of bread.

Towards noon, Nelſon, and ſome others, who had been to the eaſternmoſt key, returned; but Nelſon was in ſo weak a condition, that he was obliged to be ſupported by two men. His complaint was a violent heat in his bowels, a loſs of ſight, much drought, and an inability to walk. This I found was occaſioned by his being unable to ſupport the heat of the ſun, and that, when he was fatigued and faint, inſtead of retiring into the ſhade to reſt, he had continued to attempt more than his ſtrength was equal to. I was glad to find that he had no fever; and it was now

that

that the little wine, which I had ſo carefully ſaved, became of real uſe. I gave it in very ſmall quantities, with ſome pieces of bread ſoaked in it; and he ſoon began to recover. The boatſwain and carpenter alſo were ill, and complained of head-ach, and ſickneſs of the ſtomach. Others, who had not had any evacuation by ſtool, became ſhockingly diſtreſſed with the teneſmus; ſo that there were but few without complaints. An idea prevailed, that the ſickneſs of the boatſwain and carpenter was occaſioned by eating the dolichos. Myſelf, however, and ſome others, who had taken the ſame food, felt no inconvenience; but the truth was, that many of the people had eaten a large quantity of them raw, and Nelſon informed me, that they were conſtantly teazing him, whenever a berry was found, to know if it was good to eat; ſo that it would not have been ſurpriſing if many of them had been really poiſoned. 1789. JUNE.

Our dinner was not ſo well reliſhed as at Sunday Iſland, becauſe we had mixed the dolichos with our ſtew. The oyſters and ſoup, however, were eaten by every one, except Nelſon, whom I fed with a few ſmall pieces of bread ſoaked in half a glaſs of wine, and he continued to mend.

In my walk round the iſland, I found ſeveral cocoa-nut ſhells, the remains of an old wigwam, and the backs of two turtle, but no ſign of any quadruped. One of the people found three ſea-fowl's eggs.

As is common on ſuch ſpots, the ſoil is little other than ſand, yet it produced ſmall toa-trees, and ſome others, that we were not acquainted with. There were fiſh in the lagoon, but we could not catch any. Our wants, therefore, were not likely to be ſupplied here, not even with water for our daily expence: nevertheleſs, I determined to wait till

1789. JUNE. till the morning, that we might try our ſucceſs in the night for turtle and birds. A quiet night's reſt alſo, I conceived, would be of eſſential ſervice to thoſe who were unwell.

The wigwam and turtle ſhell, were proofs that the natives at times viſited this place; and that they had canoes, the remains of the large canoe that we ſaw at Sunday Iſland, left no room to doubt: but I did not apprehend that we ran any riſk by remaining here a ſhort time. I directed our fire, however, to be made in the thicket, that we might not be diſcovered by its light.

At noon, I obſerved the latitude of this iſland to be 11° 47′ S. The main land extended towards the N W, and was full of white ſand-hills: another ſmall iſland lay within us, bearing W by N ½ N, three leagues diſtant. Our ſituation being very low, we could ſee nothing of the reef towards the ſea.

The afternoon was advantageouſly ſpent in ſleep. There were, however, a few not diſpoſed to it, and thoſe were employed in dreſſing ſome clams to take with us for the next day's dinner: others we cut up in ſlices to dry, which I knew was the moſt valuable ſupply we could find here; but they were very ſcarce.

Towards evening, I cautioned every one againſt making too large a fire, or ſuffering it after dark to blaze up. Mr. Samuel and Mr. Peckover had the ſuperintendence of this buſineſs, while I was ſtrolling about the beach to obſerve if I thought it could be ſeen from the main. I was juſt ſatisfied that it could not, when on a ſudden the iſland appeared all in a blaze, that might have been diſcerned at a much more conſiderable diſtance. I ran to learn the cauſe, and found that it was occaſioned by the imprudence and obſtinacy

of one of the party, who, in my abſence, had inſiſted on having a fire to himſelf; in making which the flames caught the neighbouring graſs and rapidly ſpread. This miſconduct might have produced very ſerious conſequences, by diſcovering our ſituation to the natives; for, if they had attacked us, we had neither arms nor ſtrength to oppoſe an enemy. Thus the relief which I expected from a little ſleep was totally loſt, and I anxiouſly waited for the flowing of the tide, that we might proceed to ſea. 1789. JUNE.

It was high-water at half paſt five this evening, whence I deduced the time, on the full and change of the moon, to be 58′ paſt 10 in the morning: the riſe was nearly five feet. I could not obſerve the ſet of the flood; but imagined it to come from the ſouthward, and that I was miſtaken at Reſtoration Iſland, as I found the time of high-water gradually later the more we advanced to the northward.

At Reſtoration Iſland, high water, full and change,	7ʰ	10′
Sunday Iſland, - - - - - - -	9	19
Here, - - - - - - - -	10	58

After eight o'clock, Mr. Samuel and Mr. Peckover went out to watch for turtle, and three men went to the eaſt key to endeavour to catch birds. All the others complaining of being ſick, took their reſt, except Mr. Hayward and Mr. Elphinſton, whom I directed to keep watch. About midnight the bird party returned, with only twelve noddies, birds which I have already deſcribed to be about the ſize of pigeons: but if it had not been for the folly and obſtinacy of one of the party, who ſeparated from the other two, and diſturbed the birds, they might have caught a great number. I was ſo much provoked at my plans being thus defeated,

1789. JUNE. defeated, that I gave this offender * a good beating. I now went in ſearch of the turtling party, who had taken great pains, but without ſucceſs. This did not ſurpriſe me, as it was not to be expected that turtle would come near us, after the noiſe which had been made at the beginning of the evening in extinguiſhing the fire. I therefore deſired them to come back, but they requeſted to ſtay a little longer, as they ſtill hoped to find ſome before daylight: however, they returned by three o'clock, without any reward for their labour.

The birds we half dreſſed, that they might keep the better: and theſe, with a few clams, made the whole of the ſupply procured here. I tied a few gilt buttons and ſome pieces of iron to a tree, for any of the natives that might come after us; and, finding my invalids much better for their night's reſt, we embarked, and departed by dawn of Tueſday 2. day. Wind at S E; courſe to the N by W.

When we had ran two leagues to the northward, the ſea ſuddenly became rough, which not having before experienced ſince we were within the reefs, I concluded to be occaſioned by an open channel to the ocean. Soon afterwards, we met with a large ſhoal, on which were two ſandy keys; between theſe and two others, four miles to the weſt, I paſſed on to the northward, the ſea ſtill continuing to be rough.

Towards noon, I fell in with ſix other keys, moſt of which produced ſome ſmall trees and bruſh-wood. Theſe formed a pleaſing contraſt with the main land we had

* Robert Lamb.—This man, when he came to Java, acknowledged he had eaten nine birds raw, after he ſeparated from his two companions.

paſſed,

paſſed, which was full of ſand-hills. The country continued hilly, and the northernmoſt land, the ſame we had ſeen from the lagoon iſland, appeared like downs, ſloping towards the ſea. Nearly abreaſt of us, was a flat-topped hill, which on account of its ſhape, I called Pudding-pan hill; and a little to the northward were two other hills, which we called the Paps; and here was a ſmall tract of country without ſand, the eaſtern part of which forms a cape, whence the coaſt inclines to the N W by N. 1789. JUNE.

At noon, I obſerved in the latitude of 11° 18′ S, the cape bearing W, diſtant ten miles. Five ſmall keys bore from N E to S E, the neareſt of them about two miles diſtant, and a low ſandy key between us and the cape bore W, diſtant four miles. My courſe from the lagoon iſland had been N ¼ W, diſtant 30 miles.

I am ſorry it was not in my power to obtain a ſufficient knowledge of the depth of water; but in our ſituation nothing could be undertaken that might have occaſioned delay. It may however be underſtood, that, to the beſt of my judgment, from appearances, a ſhip may paſs whereever I have omitted to repreſent danger.

I divided ſix birds, and iſſued one 25th of a pound of bread, with half a pint of water, to each perſon for dinner, and I gave half a glaſs of wine to Nelſon, who was now ſo far recovered as to require no other indulgence.

The gunner, when he left the ſhip, brought his watch with him, by which we had regulated our time till to-day, when unfortunately it ſtopped; ſo that noon, ſun-riſe, and ſun-ſet, are the only parts of the 24 hours of which from henceforward I can ſpeak with certainty, as to time.

The wind blew freſh from the S S E and S E all the afternoon, with fair weather. As we ſtood to the N by W,

1789. JUNE. we found more ſea, which I attributed to our receiving leſs ſhelter from the reefs to the eaſtward: it is probable they do not extend ſo far north as this; at leaſt, it may be concluded that there is not a continued barrier to prevent ſhipping having acceſs to the ſhore. I obſerved that the ſtream ſet to the N W, which I conſidered to be the flood. In ſome places along the coaſt, we ſaw patches of wood. At five o'clock, ſteering to the N W, we paſſed a large and fair inlet, into which, I imagine, there is a ſafe and commodious entrance; it lies in latitude 11° S. About three leagues to the northward of this is an iſland, at which we arrived about ſun-ſet, and took ſhelter for the night under a ſandy point, which was the only part we could land at. This being rather a wild ſituation, I thought it beſt to ſleep in the boat: nevertheleſs I ſent a party away to ſee if any thing could be got, but they returned without ſucceſs. They ſaw a great number of turtle bones and ſhells, where the natives had been feaſting, and their laſt viſit ſeemed to be of late date. The iſland was covered with wood, but in other reſpects, it was a lump of rocks.

Wedneſday the 3d. We lay at a grapnel till day-light, with a very freſh gale and cloudy weather. The main bore from S E by S to N N W ½ W, three leagues; and a mountainous iſland, with a flat top, N by W, four or five leagues; between which and the main land were ſeveral other iſlands. The ſpot we were at, which I call Turtle Iſland, lies in latitude, by account, 10° 52′ S; and 42 miles W from Reſtoration Iſland. Abreaſt of it, the coaſt has the appearance of a ſandy deſert, but improves about three leagues farther to the northward, where it terminates in a point, near to which are many ſmall iſlands. I ſailed between theſe iſlands, where I found no bottom at twelve fathoms;

fathoms; the high mountainous iſland with a flat top, and four rocks to the S E of it, that I call the Brothers, being on my ſtarboard hand. Soon after, an extenſive opening appeared in the main land, in which were a number of high iſlands. I called this the Bay of Iſlands. We continued ſteering to the N W. Several iſlands and keys were in ſight to the northward: the moſt northerly iſland was mountainous, having on it a very high round hill; and a ſmaller was remarkable for a ſingle peaked hill. 1789. JUNE.

The coaſt to the northward and weſtward of the Bay of Iſlands, is high and woody, and has a broken appearance, with many iſlands cloſe to it; among which there are fine bays, and convenient places for ſhipping. The northernmoſt of theſe iſlands I call Wedneſday Iſland: to the N W of this we fell in with a large reef, which I believe joins a number of keys that were in ſight from the N W to the E N E. We therefore ſtood to the S W half a league, when it was noon, and I had a good obſervation of the latitude in 10° 31′ S. Wedneſday Iſland bore E by S five miles; the weſternmoſt land in ſight S W two or three leagues; the iſlands to the northward, from N W by W, to N E, and the reef from W to N E, diſtant one mile. I was now tolerably certain that we ſhould be clear of New Holland in the afternoon.

I know not how far this reef extends. It may be a continuation, or a detached part of the range of ſhoals that ſurround the coaſt. I believe the mountainous iſlands to be ſeparate from the ſhoals; and have no doubt that near them may be found good paſſages for ſhips. But I rather recommend to thoſe who are to paſs this ſtrait from the eaſtward, to take their direction from the coaſt of New

1789. JUNE. Guinea: yet, I likewiſe think that a ſhip coming from the ſouthward, will find a fair ſtrait in the latitude of 10° S. I much wiſhed to have aſcertained this point; but in our diſtreſsful ſituation, any increaſe of fatigue, or loſs of time, might have been attended with the moſt fatal conſequences. I therefore determined to paſs on without delay

As an addition to our dinner of bread and water, I ſerved to each perſon ſix oyſters.

At two o'clock in the afternoon, as we were ſteering to the S W, towards the weſternmoſt part of the land in ſight, we fell in with ſome large ſand-banks that run off from the coaſt: I therefore called this Shoal Cape. We were obliged to ſteer to the northward again, till we got round the ſhoals, when I directed the courſe to the W.

At four o'clock, the weſternmoſt of the iſlands to the northward, bore N four leagues; Wedneſday iſland E by N five leagues; and Shoal Cape S E by E two leagues. A ſmall iſland was ſeen bearing W, at which we arrived before dark, and found that it was only a rock, where boobies reſort, for which reaſon I called it Booby Iſland. Here terminated the rocks and ſhoals of the N part of New Holland, for, except Booby Iſland, no land was ſeen to the weſtward of S, after three o'clock this afternoon.

I find that Booby Iſland was ſeen by Captain Cook, and, by a remarkable coincidence of ideas, received from him the ſame name; but I cannot with certainty reconcile the ſituation of ſome parts of the coaſt that I have ſeen, to his ſurvey. I aſcribe this to the various forms in which land appears, when ſeen from the different heights of a ſhip and

Mountainous I. with a very high round Hill
West Ile
Peaked Hill
Booby I.
Wednesday I.
Shoal Cays
a
3d June 1789.
Bay of Islands
Mountainous I. with a high flat top
Brothers
Turtle I.
Sandy Coast
Sandy Keys
Pudding-Pan Hill
Sandy Keys
Sandy Coast
Lagoon I.
Sunday I.
Coast
Indian Bay
Sandy
Fair Cape
NE Coast of New Holland
by
Lieut. Willm Bligh
a a Track of Lieut. Bligh in the Bounty's Launch
Restoration I.
L. of Direction
28th May 1789
a
Longitude by Account from the Iland Tofoa
W. Harrison fec.
J.W. Parkinson sculp.

and a boat. The chart I have given, is by no means meant to ſuperſede that made by Captain Cook, who had better opportunities than I had, and was in every reſpect properly provided for ſurveying. The intention of mine is chiefly to render this narrative more intelligible, and to ſhew in what manner the coaſt appeared to me from an open boat. I have little doubt but that the opening, which I named the Bay of Iſlands, is Endeavour Straits; and that our track was to the northward of Prince of Wales's Iſles. Perhaps, by thoſe who ſhall hereafter navigate theſe ſeas, more advantage may be derived from the poſſeſſion of both our charts, than from either of them ſingly. 1789. JUNE.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Paſſage from New Holland to the Iſland Timor.—Arrive at Coupang.—Reception there.

1789. JUNE. Wedneſday 3. AT eight o'clock in the evening, we once more launched into the open ocean. Miſerable as our ſituation was in every reſpect, I was ſecretly ſurpriſed to ſee that it did not appear to affect any one ſo ſtrongly as myſelf; on the contrary, it ſeemed as if they had embarked on a voyage to Timor, in a veſſel ſufficiently calculated for ſafety and convenience. So much confidence gave me great pleaſure, and I may venture to aſſert, that to this cauſe our preſervation is chiefly to be attributed.

I encouraged every one with hopes that eight or ten days would bring us to a land of ſafety; and, after praying to God for a continuance of his moſt gracious protection, I ſerved an allowance of water for ſupper, and directed our courſe to the W S W, to counteract the ſoutherly winds, in caſe they ſhould blow ſtrong.

We had been juſt ſix days on the coaſt of New Holland, in the courſe of which we found oyſters, a few clams, ſome birds, and water. But perhaps a benefit nearly equal to this we received, by having been relieved from the fatigue of being conſtantly in the boat, and enjoying good reſt at night. Theſe advantages certainly preſerved our lives; and, ſmall as the ſupply was, I am very ſenſible how much it alleviated

our diſtreſſes. By this time, nature muſt have ſunk under the extremes of hunger and fatigue. Some would have ceaſed to ſtruggle for a life that only promiſed wretchedneſs and miſery; and others, though poſſeſſed of more bodily ſtrength, muſt ſoon have followed their unfortunate companions. Even in our preſent ſituation, we were moſt deplorable objects; but the hopes of a ſpeedy relief kept up our ſpirits. For my own part, incredible as it may appear, I felt neither extreme hunger nor thirſt. My allowance contented me, knowing that I could have no more. 1789. JUNE.

Thurſday the 4th. I ſerved one 25th of a pound of bread, and an allowance of water, for breakfaſt, and the ſame for dinner, with an addition of ſix oyſters to each perſon. At noon, latitude obſerved 10° 48′ S; courſe ſince yeſterday noon S 81° W, diſtance 111 miles; longitude, by account, from Shoal Cape, 1° 45′ W. A ſtrong trade wind at E S E, with fair weather. Thurſday 4.

This day, we ſaw a number of water-ſnakes, that were ringed yellow and black, and towards noon we paſſed a great deal of rock-weed. Though the weather was fair, we were conſtantly ſhipping water, which kept two men always employed to bale the boat.

Friday the 5th. At noon, I obſerved in latitude 10° 45′ S; our courſe ſince yeſterday W ¼ N, 108 miles; longitude made 3° 35′ W. Six oyſters were, as yeſterday, ſerved to each man, in addition to the uſual allowance of bread and water. Friday 5.

In the evening, a few boobies came about us, one of which I caught with my hand. The blood was divided among three of the men who were weakeſt, but the bird I ordered to be kept for our dinner the next day. Served a quarter

1789. JUNE. a quarter of a pint of water for ſupper, and to ſome, who were moſt in need, half a pint. In the courſe of the night, being conſtantly wet with the ſea, we ſuffered much cold and ſhiverings.

Saturday 6. Saturday the 6th. At day-light, I found that ſome of the clams, which had been hung up to dry for ſea-ſtore, were ſtolen; but every one ſolemnly denied having any knowledge of it. This forenoon we ſaw a gannet, a ſand-lark, and ſome water-ſnakes, which in general were from two to three feet long.

The uſual allowance of bread and water was ſerved for breakfaſt, and the ſame for dinner, with the bird, which I diſtributed in the uſual way, of Who ſhall have this? I propoſed to make Timor about the latitude of 9° 30′ S, or 10° S. At noon I obſerved the latitude to be 10° 19′ S; courſe N 77° W, diſtance 117 miles; longitude made from the Shoal Cape, the north part of New Holland, 5° 31′ W.

In the afternoon, I took an opportunity of examining our ſtore of bread, and found remaining 19 days allowance, at the former rate of ſerving one 25th of a pound three times a day: therefore, as I ſaw every proſpect of a quick paſſage, I again ventured to grant an allowance for ſupper, agreeable to my promiſe at the time it was diſcontinued.

We paſſed the night miſerably wet and cold, and in the
Sunday 7. morning I heard heavy complaints. The ſea was high and breaking over us. I could only afford the allowance of bread and water for breakfaſt; but for dinner I gave out an ounce of dried clams to each perſon, which was all that remained.

At noon, I altered the courſe to the W N W, to keep more from

from the ſea, as the wind blew ſtrong. Latitude obſerved 9° 31′ S; courſe N 57° W, diſtance 88 miles; longitude made 6° 46′ W. 1789. JUNE.

The ſea ran very high all this day, and we had frequent ſhowers of rain, ſo that we were continually wet, and ſuffered much cold in the night. Mr. Ledward, the ſurgeon, and Lawrence Lebogue, an old hardy ſeaman, appeared to be giving way very faſt. I could only aſſiſt them by a teaſpoonful or two of wine, which I had carefully ſaved, expecting ſuch a melancholy neceſſity.

Monday the 8th. Wind at S E. The weather was more moderate than it had been for ſome days paſt. A few gannets were ſeen. At noon, I obſerved in 8° 45′ S; courſe W N W ½ W, 106 miles; longitude made 8° 23′ W. The ſea being ſmooth, I ſteered W by S. Monday 8.

At four in the afternoon, we caught a ſmall dolphin, which was the firſt relief of the kind that we obtained. I iſſued about two ounces to each perſon, including the offals, and ſaved the remainder for dinner the next day. Towards evening the wind freſhened, and it blew ſtrong all night, ſo that we ſhipped much water, and ſuffered greatly from the wet and cold.

Tueſday the 9th. At day-light, as uſual, I heard much complaining, which my own feelings convinced me was too well founded. I gave the ſurgeon and Lebogue a little wine, but I could afford them no farther relief, except encouraging them with hopes that a very few days longer, at our preſent fine rate of ſailing, would bring us to Timor. Tueſday 9.

Gannets, boobies, men of war and tropic birds, were conſtantly about us. Served the uſual allowance of bread and water, and at noon we dined on the remains of the

1789. JUNE. dolphin, which amounted to about an ounce per man. I obſerved the latitude to be 9° 9′ S; longitude made 10° 8′ W; courſe ſince yeſterday noon S 76° W; diſtance 107 miles.

This afternoon, I ſuffered great ſickneſs from the nature of part of the ſtomach of the fiſh, which had fallen to my ſhare at dinner. At ſun-ſet I ſerved an allowance of bread and water for ſupper.

Wedneſday 10. Wedneſday the 10th. In the morning, after a very comfortleſs night, there was a viſible alteration for the worſe in many of the people; which gave me great apprehenſions. An extreme weakneſs, ſwelled legs, hollow and ghaſtly countenances, a more than common inclination to ſleep, with an apparent debility of underſtanding, ſeemed to me the melancholy preſages of an approaching diſſolution. The ſurgeon and Lebogue, in particular, were moſt miſerable objects. I occaſionally gave them a few tea-ſpoonfuls of wine, out of the little that remained, which greatly aſſiſted them. The hopes of being able to accompliſh the voyage, was our principal ſupport. The boatſwain very innocently told me, that he really thought I looked worſe than any one in the boat. The ſimplicity with which he uttered ſuch an opinion amuſed me, and I returned him a better compliment.

Our latitude at noon, was 9° 16′ S. Longitude from the north part of New Holland, 12° 1′ W. Courſe ſince yeſterday noon, W ½ S, 111 miles. Birds and rock-weed ſhewed that we were not far from land; but I expected ſuch ſigns here, as there are many iſlands between the eaſt part of Timor and New Guinea. The night was more moderate than the laſt.

Thurſday 11. Thurſday the 11th. Every one received the cuſtomary allowance

allowance of bread and water, and an extra allowance of water was given to thoſe who were moſt in need. At noon I obſerved in latitude 9° 41′ S; courſe S 77° W, diſtance 109 miles; longitude made 13° 49′ W. I had little doubt of having now paſſed the meridian of the eaſtern part of Timor, which is laid down in 128° E. This diffuſed univerſal joy and ſatisfaction. 1789. JUNE.

In the afternoon, we ſaw gannets, and many other birds, and at ſun-ſet we kept a very anxious look-out. In the evening we caught a booby, which I reſerved for our dinner the next day.

Friday the 12th. At three in the morning, with an exceſs of joy, we diſcovered Timor bearing from W S W to W N W, and I hauled on a wind to the N N E till day-light, when the land bore from S W by S to N E by N. Our diſtance from the ſhore, two leagues. Friday 12.

It is not poſſible for me to deſcribe the pleaſure which the bleſſing of the ſight of this land diffuſed among us. It appeared ſcarce credible to ourſelves, that in an open boat, and ſo poorly provided, we ſhould have been able to reach the coaſt of Timor in forty-one days after leaving Tofoa, having in that time run, by our log, a diſtance of 3618 miles; and that, notwithſtanding our extreme diſtreſs, no one ſhould have periſhed in the voyage.

I have already mentioned, that I knew not where the Dutch ſettlement was ſituated; but I had a faint idea that it was at the S W part of the iſland. I therefore, after day-light, bore away along ſhore to the S S W, which I was the more readily induced to do, as the wind would not ſuffer us to go towards the N E without great loſs of time.

1789. JUNE. The day gave us a moſt agreeable proſpect of the land, which was interſperſed with woods and lawns; the interior part mountainous, but the ſhore low. Towards noon, the coaſt became higher, with ſome remarkable head-lands. We were greatly delighted with the general look of the country, which exhibited many cultivated ſpots and beautiful ſituations; but we could only ſee a few ſmall huts, whence I concluded that no European reſided in this part of the iſland. Much ſea ran on the ſhore, which made landing impracticable. At noon, we were abreaſt of a high head-land; the extremes of the land bore S W ½ W, and N N E ½ E; our diſtance off ſhore being three miles; latitude, by obſervation, 9° 59′ S; and my longitude, by dead reckoning from the north part of New Holland, 15° 5′ W.

With the uſual allowance of bread and water for dinner, I divided the bird we had caught the night before, and to the ſurgeon and Lebogue I gave a little wine.

The wind blew freſh at E, and E S E, with very hazy weather. During the afternoon, we continued our courſe along a low ſhore, covered with innumerable palm-trees, called the Fan Palm from the leaf ſpreading like a fan; but here we ſaw no ſigns of cultivation, nor had the country ſo fine an appearance as to the eaſtward. This, however, was only a ſmall tract, for by ſun-ſet it improved again, and I ſaw ſeveral great ſmokes where the inhabitants were clearing and cultivating their grounds. We had now run 25 miles to the W S W ſince noon, and were W five miles from a low point, which, in the afternoon, I imagined had been the ſouthernmoſt land; and here the coaſt formed a deep bend, with low land in the bight that appeared like iſlands.

iſlands. The weſt ſhore was high; but from this part of the coaſt to the high cape which we were abreaſt of at noon, the ſhore is low, and I believe ſhoal. I particularly remark this ſituation, becauſe here the very high ridge of mountains, that run from the eaſt end of the iſland, terminate, and the appearance of the country changes for the worſe. 1789. JUNE.

That we might not run paſt any ſettlement in the night, I determined to preſerve my ſtation till the morning, and therefore brought to under a cloſe-reefed foreſail. We were here in ſhoal water, our diſtance from the ſhore being half a league, the weſternmoſt land in ſight bearing W S W ½ W. Served bread and water for ſupper, and the boat lying to very well, all but the officer of the watch endeavoured to get a little ſleep.

Saturday the 13th. At two in the morning, we wore, and ſtood in ſhore till day-light, when I found we had drifted, during the night, about three leagues to the W S W, the ſouthernmoſt land in ſight bearing W. On examining the coaſt, and not ſeeing any ſign of a ſettlement, we bore away to the weſtward, having a ſtrong gale, againſt a weather current, which occaſioned much ſea. The ſhore was high and covered with wood; but we did not run far, before low land again formed the coaſt, the points of which opening at weſt, I once more fancied we were on the ſouth part of the iſland; but at ten o'clock we found the coaſt again in clining towards the ſouth, part of it bearing W S W ½ W. At the ſame time, high land appeared in the S W; but the weather was ſo hazy, that it was doubtful whether the two lands were ſeparated, the opening only extending one point of the compaſs. For this reaſon I ſtood Saturday 13.

towards

1789. JUNE. towards the outer land, and found it to be the iſland Roti.

I returned to the ſhore we had left, and brought to a grapnel in a ſandy bay, that I might more conveniently calculate my ſituation. In this place, we ſaw ſeveral ſmokes, where the natives were clearing their grounds. During the little time we remained here, the maſter and carpenter very much importuned me to let them go in ſearch of ſupplies; to which, at length, I aſſented; but, not finding any other perſon willing to be of their party, they did not chooſe to quit the boat. I ſtopped here no longer than for the purpoſe juſt mentioned, and we continued ſteering along ſhore. We had a view of a beautiful-looking country, as if formed by art into lawns and parks. The coaſt is low, and covered with woods, in which are innumerable fan palm-trees, that look like cocoa-nut walks. The interior part is high land, but very different from the more eaſtern parts of the iſland, where it is exceedingly mountainous, and to appearance, the ſoil better.

At noon, the iſland Roti bore S W by W ſeven leagues. I had no obſervation for the latitude, but by account, we were in 10° 12′ S; our courſe ſince yeſterday noon being S 77° W, 54 miles. The uſual allowance of bread and water was ſerved for breakfaſt and dinner, and to the ſurgeon and Lebogue, I continued to give wine.

We had a ſtrong breeze at E S E, with hazy weather, all the afternoon. At two o'clock, having run through a very dangerous breaking ſea, the cauſe of which I attributed to be a ſtrong tide ſetting to windward, and ſhoal water, we diſcovered a ſpacious bay or ſound, with a fair entrance about two or three miles wide. I now conceived hopes that our

voyage was nearly at an end, as no place could appear more eligible for ſhipping, or more likely to be choſen for an European ſettlement: I therefore came to a grapnel near the eaſt ſide of the entrance, in a ſmall ſandy bay, where we ſaw a hut, a dog, and ſome cattle; and I immediately ſent the boatſwain and gunner away to the hut, to diſcover the inhabitants. 1789. JUNE.

The S W point of the entrance bore W ½ S three miles; the S E point S by W three quarters of a mile; and the iſland Roti from S by W ¼ W to S W ¼ W, about five leagues.

While we lay here, I found the ebb came from the northward, and before our departure the falling of the tide diſcovered to us a reef of rocks, about two cables length from the ſhore: the whole being covered at high-water, renders it dangerous. On the oppoſite ſhore alſo appeared very high breakers; but there is nevertheleſs plenty of room, and certainly a ſafe channel for a firſt-rate man of war.

The bay or ſound within, ſeemed to be of a conſiderable extent; the northern part being about five leagues diſtant. Here the land made in moderate riſings joined by lower grounds. But the iſland Roti to the ſouthward, is the beſt mark by which to know this place.

I had juſt time to make theſe remarks, when I ſaw the boatſwain and gunner returning with ſome of the natives: I therefore no longer doubted of our ſucceſs, and that our expectations would be fully gratified. They brought five Indians, and informed me that they had found two families, where the women treated them with European politeneſs. From theſe people I learned, that the governor reſided at a

place

1789. JUNE. place called Coupang, which was ſome diſtance to the N E. I made ſigns for one of them to go in the boat, and ſhow us the way to Coupang, intimating that I would pay him for his trouble: the man readily complied, and came into the boat.

Theſe people were of a dark tawny colour, had long black hair, and chewed a great deal of beetle. Their dreſs was, a ſquare piece of cloth round the hips, in the folds of which was ſtuck a large knife; a handkerchief wrapped round the head; and another hanging by the four corners from the ſhoulders, which ſerved as a bag for their beetle equipage. They brought us a few pieces of dried turtle, and ſome ears of Indian corn. This laſt was the moſt welcome; for the turtle was ſo hard, that it could not be eaten without being firſt ſoaked in hot water. They offered to bring us ſome other refreſhments if I would wait; but, as the pilot was willing, I determined to puſh on. It was about half an hour paſt four when we ſailed.

By direction of the pilot, we kept cloſe to the eaſt ſhore under all our ſail; but as night came on, the wind died away, and we were obliged to try at the oars, which I was ſurpriſed to ſee we could uſe with ſome effect. At ten o'clock, finding we advanced but ſlowly, I came to a grapnel, and for the firſt time, I iſſued double allowance of bread and a little wine to each perſon.

Sunday 14. Sunday the 14th. At one o'clock in the morning, after the moſt happy and ſweet ſleep that ever men enjoyed, we weighed, and continued to keep the eaſt ſhore on board, in very ſmooth water; when at laſt I found we were again open to the ſea; the whole of the land to the weſtward, that we had paſſed, being an iſland, which the pilot called Pulo Samow. The northern entrance of this channel is about a mile

mile and a half or two miles wide, and I had no ground at ten fathoms. 1789. JUNE.

The report of two cannon that were fired, gave new life to every one; and ſoon after we diſcovered two ſquare-rigged veſſels and a cutter at anchor to the eaſtward. We endeavoured to work to windward, but were obliged to take to our oars again, having loſt ground on each tack. We kept cloſe to the ſhore, and continued rowing till four o'clock, when I brought to a grapnel, and gave another allowance of bread and wine to all hands. As ſoon as we had reſted a little, we weighed again, and rowed till near day-light, when we came to a grapnel, off a ſmall fort and town, which the pilot told me was Coupang.

Among the things which the boatſwain had thrown into the boat before we left the ſhip, was a bundle of ſignal flags that had been uſed by the boats to ſhow the depth of water in ſounding: with theſe we had, in the courſe of the paſſage, made a ſmall jack, which I now hoiſted in the main ſhrouds, as a ſignal of diſtreſs; for I did not think proper to land without leave.

Soon after day-break, a ſoldier hailed us to land, which I immediately did, among a crowd of Indians, and was agreeably ſurpriſed to meet with an Engliſh ſailor, who belonged to one of the veſſels in the road. His captain, he told me, was the ſecond perſon in the town; I therefore deſired to be conducted to him, as I was informed the governor was ill, and could not then be ſpoken with.

Captain Spikerman received me with great humanity. I informed him of our diſtreſſed ſituation; and requeſted that care might be taken of thoſe who were with me, without delay. On which he gave directions for their immediate reception at his own houſe, and went himſelf to

1789. JUNE. the governor, to know at what time I could be permitted to ſee him; which was fixed to be at eleven o'clock.

I now deſired my people to come on ſhore, which was as much as ſome of them could do, being ſcarce able to walk: they, however, were helped to the houſe, and found tea with bread and butter provided for their breakfaſt.

The abilities of a painter, perhaps, could ſeldom have been diſplayed to more advantage, than in the delineation of the two groups of figures, which at this time preſented themſelves to each other. An indifferent ſpectator would have been at a loſs which moſt to admire; the eyes of famine ſparkling at immediate relief, or the horror of their preſervers at the ſight of ſo many ſpectres, whoſe ghaſtly countenances, if the cauſe had been unknown, would rather have excited terror than pity. Our bodies were nothing but ſkin and bones, our limbs were full of ſores, and we were clothed in rags: in this condition, with the tears of joy and gratitude flowing down our cheeks, the people of Timor beheld us with a mixture of horror, ſurpriſe, and pity.

The governor, Mr. William Adrian Van Eſte, notwithſtanding extreme ill-health, became ſo anxious about us, that I ſaw him before the appointed time. He received me with great affection, and gave me the fulleſt proofs that he was poſſeſſed of every feeling of a humane and good man. Sorry as he was, he ſaid, that ſuch a calamity could ever have happened to us, yet he conſidered it as the greateſt bleſſing of his life that we had fallen under his protection; and, though his infirmity was ſo great that he could not do the office of a friend himſelf, he would give ſuch orders as I might be certain would procure us every ſupply we wanted. A houſe ſhould be immediately prepared for

me, and, with reſpect to my people, he ſaid, that I might have room for them either at the hoſpital or on board of captain Spikerman's ſhip, which lay in the road; and he expreſſed much uneaſineſs that Coupang could not afford them better accommodations, the houſe aſſigned to me being the only one uninhabited, and the ſituation of the few families that lived at this place ſuch, that they could not conveniently receive ſtrangers. For the preſent, till matters could be properly regulated, he gave directions that victuals for my people ſhould be dreſſed at his own houſe. 1789. JUNE.

On returning to Captain Spikerman's houſe, I found that every kind relief had been given to my people. The ſurgeon had dreſſed their ſores, and the cleaning of their perſons had not been leſs attended to, ſeveral friendly gifts of apparel having been preſented to them.

I deſired to be ſhewn to the houſe that was intended for me, which I found ready, with ſervants to attend. It conſiſted of a hall, with a room at each end, and a loft over-head; and was ſurrounded by a piazza, with an outer apartment in one corner, and a communication from the back part of the houſe to the ſtreet. I therefore determined, inſtead of ſeparating from my people, to lodge them all with me; and I divided the houſe as follows: One room I took to myſelf, the other I allotted to the maſter, ſurgeon, Mr. Nelſon, and the gunner; the loft to the other officers; and the outer apartment to the men. The hall was common to the officers, and the men had the back piazza. Of this diſpoſition I informed the governor, and he ſent down chairs, tables, and benches, with bedding and other neceſſaries for the uſe of every one.

The governor, when I took my leave, had deſired me to acquaint him with every thing of which I ſtood in need;

1789. JUNE. but it was only at particular times that he had a few moments of eaſe, or could attend to any thing; being in a dying ſtate, with an incurable diſeaſe. On this account, I tranſacted whatever buſineſs I had, with Mr. Timotheus Wanjon, the ſecond of this place, who was the governor's ſon-in-law; and who alſo contributed every thing in his power to make our ſituation comfortable. I had been, therefore, miſinformed by the ſeaman, who told me that captain Spikerman was the next perſon in command to the governor.

At noon, a dinner was brought to the houſe, ſufficiently good to make perſons, more accuſtomed to plenty, eat too much. Yet I believe few in ſuch a ſituation would have obſerved more moderation than my people did. My greateſt apprehenſion was, that they would eat too much fruit, of which there was great variety in ſeaſon at this time.

Having ſeen every one enjoy this meal of plenty, I dined myſelf with Mr. Wanjon; but I felt no extraordinary inclination to eat or drink. Reſt and quiet, I conſidered, as more neceſſary to the re-eſtabliſhment of my health, and therefore retired ſoon to my room, which I found furniſhed with every convenience. But, inſtead of reſt, my mind was diſpoſed to reflect on our late ſufferings, and on the failure of the expedition; but, above all, on the thanks due to Almighty God, who had given us power to ſupport and bear ſuch heavy calamities, and had enabled me at laſt, to be the means of ſaving eighteen lives.

In times of difficulty, there will generally ariſe circumſtances that bear particularly hard on a commander. In our late ſituation, it was not the leaſt of my diſtreſſes, to be conſtantly aſſailed with the melancholy demands of my people for an increaſe of allowance, which it grieved me

to

to refuſe. The neceſſity of obſerving the moſt rigid œconomy in the diſtribution of our proviſions, was ſo evident, that I reſiſted their ſolicitations, and never deviated from the agreement we made at ſetting out. The conſequence of this care was, that at our arrival we had ſtill remaining ſufficient for eleven days, at our ſcanty allowance: and if we had been ſo unfortunate as to have miſſed the Dutch ſettlement at Timor, we could have proceeded to Java, where I was certain that every ſupply we wanted could be procured. 1789. JUNE.

Another diſagreeable circumſtance, to which my ſituation expoſed me, was the caprice of ignorant people. Had I been incapable of acting, they would have carried the boat on ſhore as ſoon as we made the iſland of Timor, without conſidering that landing among the natives, at a diſtance from the European ſettlement, might have been as dangerous as among any other Indians.

The quantity of proviſions with which we left the ſhip, was not more than we ſhould have conſumed in five days, had there been no neceſſity for huſbanding our ſtock. The mutineers muſt naturally have concluded, that we could have no other place of refuge than the Friendly Iſlands; for it was not likely they ſhould imagine, that, ſo poorly equipped as we were in every reſpect, there could have been a poſſibility of our attempting to return homewards: much leſs can they ſuſpect that the account of their villany has already reached their native country.

When I reflect how providentially our lives were ſaved at Tofoa, by the Indians delaying their attack; and that, with ſcarce any thing to ſupport life, we croſſed a ſea of more than 1200 leagues, without ſhelter from the inclemency of the weather; when I reflect that in an open boat,

1789. JUNE. boat, with ſo much ſtormy weather, we eſcaped foundering, that not any of us were taken off by diſeaſe, that we had the great good fortune to paſs the unfriendly natives of other countries without accident, and at laſt happily to meet with the moſt friendly and beſt of people to relieve our diſtreſſes; I ſay, when I reflect on all theſe wonderful eſcapes, the remembrance of ſuch great mercies enables me to bear, with reſignation and chearfulneſs, the failure of an expedition, the ſucceſs of which I had ſo much at heart, and which was fruſtrated at a time when I was congratulating myſelf on the faireſt proſpect of being able to complete it in a manner that would fully have anſwered the intention of his Majeſty, and the humane promoters of ſo benevolent a plan.

With reſpect to the preſervation of our health, during a courſe of 16 days of heavy and almoſt continual rain, I would recommend to every one in a ſimilar ſituation, the method we practiſed, which is, to dip their clothes in the ſalt-water, and wring them out, as often as they become filled with rain: it was the only reſource we had, and I believe was of the greateſt ſervice to us, for it felt more like a change of dry clothes than could well be imagined. We had occaſion to do this ſo often, that at length all our clothes were wrung to pieces: for, except the few days we paſſed on the coaſt of New Holland, we were continually wet either with rain or ſea.

Thus, through the aſſiſtance of Divine Providence, we ſurmounted the difficulties and diſtreſſes of a moſt perilous voyage, and arrived ſafe in an hoſpitable port, where every neceſſary and comfort were adminiſtered to us with a moſt liberal hand.

CHAP.

NEW-GUINEA
NEW-HOLLAND
NEW-HOLLAND
Java
Timor
Amboyna
Banda
Arafura Sea
Coral Sea
Louisiade
New Britain
New Ireland
New Hebrides
New Caledonia
Norfolk I.
Friendly Islands
Tofoa
Tongataboo
Annamooka
Hapaee
Kotoo
Namocka
Feejee Islands
Bligh's Islands
Duke of Bolton's Island
Tofoa to Timor
by
Lieut. William Bligh
1789.

CHAP. XVIII.

At Coupang.

FROM the great humanity and attention of the governor, and the gentlemen, at Coupang, we received every kind of aſſiſtance, and were not long without evident ſigns of returning health. Shortly after our arrival, I preſented to the governor, a formal account of the loſs of the Bounty; and a requiſition, in his Majeſty's name, that inſtructions might be ſent to all the Dutch ſettlements, to ſtop the ſhip if ſhe made her appearance. With this, a complete deſcriptive liſt of the mutineers was given. 1789. JUNE. Timor.

I likewiſe requeſted, in one of my firſt viſits to the governor, that Nelſon might have permiſſion to walk about the country in ſearch of plants, which was readily granted, with an offer of whatever aſſiſtance I ſhould think neceſſary: and the governor aſſured me that the country was well worth examination, as it abounded with many curious and medicinal plants. From this indulgence I derived no benefit; for Nelſon, who ſince we left New Holland, had been but in a weak condition, about this time was taken ill, in conſequence of a cold cauſed by imprudently leaving off warm clothing.

To ſecure our arrival at Batavia, before the October fleet ſailed for Europe, I gave public notice of my intention to hire a veſſel to carry us to Batavia. In conſequence of this

1789. JULY. this notice, ſeveral offers were made, but none that I thought reaſonable; which determined me to purchaſe a ſmall ſchooner in the road, that was 34 feet long; for which I gave 1000 rix-dollars, and fitted her for ſea, under the name of His Majeſty's ſchooner Reſource. As the coaſt of Java is frequently infeſted with ſmall piratical veſſels, it was neceſſary that we ſhould be provided with the proper means of defence. In this I was aſſiſted by the friendſhip of Mr. Wanjon, who ſupplied me with four braſs ſwivels, 14 ſtand of ſmall arms, and ammunition, which he obligingly let me have as a loan, to be returned at Batavia.

July 20. On the 20th of July, I had the misfortune to loſe Mr. David Nelſon: he died of an inflammatory fever. The loſs of this honeſt man I very much lamented: he had, with great care and diligence, attended to the object for which he was ſent, and had always been ready to forward every plan that was propoſed, for the good of the ſervice in which we were engaged. He was not leſs uſeful in our voyage hither, in the courſe of which he gave me great ſatisfaction, by the patience and fortitude with which he conducted himſelf.

July 21. July 21ſt. This day, I was employed attending the funeral of Mr. Nelſon. The corpſe was carried by twelve ſoldiers dreſt in black, preceded by the miniſter; next followed myſelf and the ſecond governor; then ten gentlemen of the town and the officers of the ſhips in the harbour; and after them my own officers and people.

After reading our burial-ſervice, the body was interred behind the chapel, in the burying-ground appropriated to the Europeans of the town. I was ſorry I could get no tombſtone to place over his remains.

This

This was the ſecond voyage Mr. Nelſon had undertaken to the South Seas, having been ſent out by Sir Joſeph Banks, to collect plants, ſeeds, &c. in Captain Cook's laſt voyage. And now, after ſurmounting ſo many difficulties, and in the midſt of thankfulneſs for his deliverance, he was called upon to pay the debt of nature, at a time leaſt expected. 1789. JULY.

Our ſchooner being victualled and ready for ſea; on the 20th of Auguſt, I took an affectionate leave of the hoſpitable and friendly inhabitants of Coupang, and embarked. In the afternoon we ſailed, having the launch, which had ſo much contributed to our preſervation, in tow. We exchanged ſalutes with the fort and ſhipping as we ran out of the harbour. Auguſt 20.

The town of Coupang is ſituated in a great bay, which is an excellent road for ſhipping. The latitude of the town is 10° 12′ S. According to the Dutch charts, it is in 121° 51′ E longitude. Taking the mean between the longitude by my reckoning on our arrival at Coupang, and the longitude afterwards calculated from our run to Batavia, gives me for the longitude of Coupang 124° 41′ E.

This ſettlement was formed in the year 1630, and is the only one the Dutch have on the iſland Timor. They have reſidents in different parts of the country. On the north ſide of Timor, there is a Portugueſe ſettlement. The produce of the iſland is chiefly ſandal wood and bees wax: the former article is now ſcarce. Wax they have in great plenty. The bees build their neſts in buſhes, and in the boughs of trees, to which the natives cannot approach but with fire. The honey is put into jars, and the wax is run into blocks of three feet in length, and from 12 to 15 inches ſquare. The natives, at leaſt thoſe who live in the neighbour-

1789. AUGUST. hood of Coupang, are of a very indolent diſpoſition, of which the Chineſe have taken advantage; for though the Malays are very fond of traffic, moſt of their trade is carried on in ſmall Chineſe veſſels, of from 10 to 30 tons burthen. There is a market at Coupang for the country people, in which, however, there is little buſineſs done. I have ſeen a man from the country, come to market with two potatoes: and this is not unuſual. Theſe being ſold for two doits (equal to a halfpenny Engliſh) ſerve to ſupply him with beetle to chew; and the remainder of the day is paſſed in lounging about the town. The inland people, who live at a diſtance from the Europeans, are ſtrong and active; but their want of cleanlineſs, ſubjects them to filthy diſeaſes.

The chief of the natives, or king of the iſland, is by the Dutch ſtiled Keyſer (Emperor.) This prince lives at a place called Backennaſſy, about four miles diſtant from Coupang. His authority over the natives is not wholly undiſputed; which is by the Dutch attributed to the intrigues of the Portugueſe, who are on the north part of Timor. The iſland has lately ſuffered much by a competition between the preſent king and one of his nephews, which cauſed a civil war, that laſted from the beginning of the year 1786 to 1788, when their differences were ſettled by a treaty, chiefly in favour of the king. The ravages committed in theſe diſputes, have occaſioned a ſcarcity of proviſions, that probably, from the want of induſtry in the natives, will not ſoon be remedied. I had an opportunity of making a viſit to the king. His dwelling was a large houſe, which was divided into only three apartments, and ſurrounded by a piazza: agreeably ſituated, but very dirty, as was all the furniture. The king, who is an elderly man,

man, received me with much civility, and ordered refreſh- 1789. AUGUST.
ments to be ſet before me, which were tea, rice cakes, roaſted Indian corn, and dried buffalo fleſh, with about a pint of arrack, which I believe was all he had. His dreſs was, a cheque wrapper girded round his waiſt with a ſilk and gold belt, a looſe linen jacket, and a coarſe handkerchief about his head. A few of his chiefs were with him, who partook of our repaſt; after which, the king retired with three of them for a ſhort time, and when he returned, preſented me with a round plate of metal, about four inches diameter, on which was ſtamped the figure of a ſtar. As I had been informed that arrack would be an acceptable preſent, I was prepared to make a return, which was well received. They never dilute their liquor, and, from habit, are able to drink a large quantity of ſpirits at a time, without being intoxicated.

When a king dies, a large feaſt is made, to which all the inhabitants are invited. The body, after a few days, is put into a coffin, which is cloſed up and kept three years before it is interred.

The Dutch have been at ſome pains to eſtabliſh Chriſtianity among the natives: but it has not gained much ground, except in the neighbourhood of Coupang. The preſent king was chriſtened by the name of Barnardus. His Indian name is *Bacchee Bannock*. The ſcriptures are tranſlated into the Malay language, and prayers are performed, in the church at Coupang, by a Malay clergyman, in that language.

I met, at Timor, with moſt of the fruits that are deſcribed n Captain Cook's firſt voyage, as natives of Batavia, except the Mangoſtan. The bread-fruit tree, called by the Malays *Soccoom*, likewiſe grows here with great luxuriance, nd appears to be as much a native of this iſland as it is of

1789. AUGUST. Otaheite. The fruit is exactly of the ſame kind, but not ſo good. A bread-fruit of Timor, weighs half as much more as one of equal ſize at Otaheite. It is not uſed here as bread, but generally eaten with milk and ſugar. At Backennaſſy I ſaw about twenty of the trees, larger than any I have ſeen at Otaheite. Here is alſo a ſort of bread-fruit tree, that produces ſeeds, not unlike Windſor beans, and equally palatable, either boiled or roaſted. No other part of the fruit is eatable; and though the tree, I am told, is to all appearance the ſame as the other, the fruits have but little reſemblance; the fruit of this being covered with projecting points, nearly half an inch in length.

I received a preſent of ſome fine plants, from the governor, which I was afterwards unfortunately obliged to leave at Batavia, for want of proper room to take care of them, in the packet by which I returned to Europe. Mr. Wanjon likewiſe favoured me with ſome ſeeds for his Majeſty's garden at Kew, which I had the good fortune to deliver ſafe, on my return: and ſome of the mountain rice, cultivated at Timor, on the dry land, which was forwarded to his Majeſty's botanic garden at St. Vincent, and to other parts in the Weſt Indies.

A reſemblance of language between the people of the South Sea iſlands, and the inhabitants of many of the iſlands in the Eaſt Indies, has been remarked in Captain Cook's firſt voyage. Here, the reſemblance appeared ſtronger than has yet been noticed; particularly in their numerals. But beſides the language, I obſerved ſome cuſtoms among the people of Timor, ſtill more ſtriking for their ſimilarity. They practiſe the *Tooge-tooge* * of

* The *Tooge-tooge* is deſcribed in Captain Cook's laſt voyage, Vol. I. page 323; and the *Roomee*, in the ſame voyage, Vol. II. page 64.

the

the Friendly Iſlands, which they call *Toombock:* and the *Roomee* of Otaheite, which they call *Ramas.* I likewiſe ſaw, placed on their graves, offerings of baſkets with tobacco and beetle. 1789. AUGUST.

I left the governor, Mr. Van Eſte, at the point of death. To this gentleman our moſt grateful thanks are due, for the humane and friendly treatment that we received from him. His ill ſtate of health only prevented him from ſhowing us more particular marks of attention. Unhappily, it is to his memory only that I now pay this tribute. It was a fortunate circumſtance for us, that Mr. Wanjon, the next in place to the governor, was equally humane and ready to relieve us. His attention was unremitting, and, when there was a doubt about ſupplying me with money, to enable me to purchaſe a veſſel, he chearfully took it upon himſelf; without which, it was evident, I ſhould have been too late at Batavia to have ſailed for Europe with the October fleet. I can only return ſuch ſervices by ever retaining a grateful remembrance of them.

Mr. Max, the town ſurgeon, likewiſe behaved to us with the moſt diſintereſted humanity: he attended every one with the utmoſt care; for which I could not prevail on him to receive any payment, or to render me any account, or other anſwer, than that it was his duty.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

From Timor to Batavia.

1789. AUGUST. FROM Coupang, we ſteered N W by W, having a moderate breeze at S E with fair weather.

Thurſday 20. Saturday 22. Saturday the 22d. At day-light, we ſaw the iſland Flores to the northward. At noon, latitude obſerved 9° 27′ S, and longitude by account, from Coupang, 2° 10′ W. Our diſtance from the coaſt of Flores was about 10 leagues; and two high peaked mountains bore N ½ E and N N W. Theſe two mountains reſemble each other in ſhape, and the weſternmoſt is a volcano. The interior parts of Flores are mountainous and woody: but near the ſea-coaſt is a fine open country. A Dutch map, with which I was provided, places the ſouth part of Flores in 9° 3′ S, which I am of opinion is too far ſouth. We ſteered along the ſouth ſide of Flores, moſtly with light winds and hazy weather, ſo that we did not conſtantly keep ſight of the coaſt.

Tueſday 25. Tueſday the 25th. At noon, we were off Toorns iſland, which bore N W by N, three or four leagues diſtant. Our latitude obſerved, was 8° 57′ S, and longitude made by dead reckoning from Coupang, 3° 27′ W. Toorns iſland is about four leagues in circuit, and has a craggy and uneven appearance. There is a curious high peak on the S W part: the land near the ſhore is low and woody.

§ On

On the 27th, at noon, we were near the entrance of the Straits of Mangaryn, which not appearing ſo open and clear as repreſented in the map, I ſteered for the Straits of Sapi, intending to paſs through; but was obliged to give up this plan, by ſtrong currents ſetting to the S E, which there was not ſufficient wind to enable us to ſtem. I therefore again ſtood for the Straits of Mangaryn, which we ran through in the afternoon of the 29th, being favoured with a freſh breeze from the S S E. On our firſt entering the ſtraits, we got cloſe to the Flores ſhore: our courſe through was N ¼ E. We tried for ſoundings, but could not any where find bottom at 25 and 30 fathoms depth. On the Flores ſide, there are many good harbours and bays, where veſſels may anchor; but the country hereabouts appears burnt up and deſolate.

1789. AUGUST. Thurſday 27. Saturday 29.

I had no azimuth-compaſs, and conſequently could not obſerve very accurately the variation; but I believe there is ſo little in Mangaryn Straits, that no great error will be occaſioned by conſidering the true and magnetic bearings to be the ſame.

When we had paſſed the ſtraits, we kept to the weſtward, running along the north ſide of the iſland Sumbawa, where there is a very high mountain near the coaſt; at the foot of which, I am informed, are many runs of good water, conveniently ſituated for ſhips to ſupply themſelves. The latitude of the north part of Sumbawa I make, by my obſervations and bearings, to be 8° 6′ S, which differs very little from the Dutch charts.

In the night of the 31ſt, ſeveral prows were rowing about us, on which account, we kept all night under arms. Monday 31.

Thurſday the 3d. This and the two following days, we were ſailing along the north ſide of the iſland Lombock, on which SEPTEMBER. Thurſday 3.

1789. SEPTEMBER. which is a high mountain. Moſt of the iſlands in this route are diſtinguiſhed by high mountains. Lombock appears to be well clothed with wood. In the nights, we ſaw fires upon the high lands, at a diſtance from the coaſt.

Sunday 6. Sunday the 6th. In the afternoon, we ſaw the high land of Cape Sandana, which is the NE part of Java.

Monday 7. The next day, we were off Cape Sandana, which is a low cape, projecting from the high land already mentioned. This cape is placed by the Dutch maps in 7° 52′ S. But according to my obſervation, and our eſtimated diſtance from the land, I make it in 7° 46′ S latitude. The longitude, by my dead reckoning, from Coupang to Cape Sandana, was 11° 33′ W.

We ſteered to the weſtward, along the coaſt of Java;

Thurſday 10. and on the 10th, at noon, we anchored off Paſſourwang, a Dutch ſettlement on the coaſt of Java, in two fathoms; diſtant from the ſhore half a league; the entrance of the river bearing S W. The coaſt hereabouts is ſo ſhoal, that large ſhips are obliged to anchor three or four miles from the land. As ſoon as we were at anchor, I got in my boat and went on ſhore. The banks of the river, near the entrance, were mud, on which grew a few mangrove buſhes. Among them we ſaw hogs running, and many were laying dead in the mud, which cauſed a moſt intolerable ſtench and made me heartily repent having come here; but after proceeding about a mile up the river, the courſe of which was ſerpentine, we found a very pleaſant country, and landed at a ſmall and well-conſtructed fort; where I was received in a friendly and polite manner by M. Adrian Van Rye, the commandant. By the return of the boat, I ſent on board a ſmall bullock, and other proviſions. I likewiſe took a pilot to conduct us to Sourabya.

The

1789. SEPTEMBER.

The houſes at Paſſourwang are neatly built, and the country appears to be well cultivated. The produce of this ſettlement is rice, of which they export large quantities. There are but few Dutch here: the Javaneſe are numerous, and their chief lives with conſiderable ſplendour. They have good roads, and poſts are eſtabliſhed along the coaſt; and it appears to be a buſy and well-regulated ſettlement. Latitude 7° 36′ S. Longitude 1° 44′ W of Cape Sandana.

The next day, about noon, we ſailed; and on the 12th, in the evening, anchored in Sourabya road, in ſeven fathoms: the flag-ſtaff bearing S ¼ W; diſtance from the ſhore one mile. We found riding here, ſeven ſquare-rigged, and ſeveral ſmaller veſſels. Friday 11. Saturday 12.

It was too late, when we anchored, to ſend a boat on ſhore. The next morning, before day-light, three guard-boats ſtationed themſelves near us, and I was informed, that I muſt not land or ſend a boat on ſhore. This reſtriction, I learnt from the officer of the guard-boats, was in conformity to general orders concerning all ſtrange veſſels on their firſt arrival. At nine in the forenoon, leave came off for us to land, and ſoon after the guard-boats quitted us. Sunday 13.

I was received on ſhore with great civility and friendſhip by the governor, or Opperhooft, M. Ant. Barkay, and the commandant of the troops, M. de Boſe. By theſe gentlemen I was hoſpitably entertained, and adviſed to remain till the 16th, when ſome veſſels were to ſail, with whom I might keep company, which they recommended on account of pirates.

Sourabya is one of the moſt pleaſant places I ever ſaw. It is ſituated on the banks of a river, and is a mile and a

1789. SEPTEMBER. half diſtant from the ſea-ſhore, ſo that only the flag-ſtaff can be ſeen from the road. The river is navigable up to the town for veſſels of 100 tons burthen, and the bank on one ſide is made convenient for tracking. The Chineſe carry on a conſiderable trade here, and have a town or camp on the ſide of the river oppoſite to Sourabya. The country near the town is flat, and the ſoil light, ſo that they plow with a ſingle bullock or buffalo, *(Karrabow)*. The interior parts of the country, near the mountains, are infeſted with a breed of fierce tygers, which makes travelling inland very dangerous. They have here a breed of horſes, which are ſmall, but they are handſome and ſtrong.

The Javaneſe in this neighbourhood are numerous. M. Barkay and M. de Boſe took me with them to pay a viſit to two of the principal natives, whom we found attended by a number of men armed with pikes, in great military order. We were entertained with a concert of muſic; the inſtruments were gongs, drums, and a fiddle with two ſtrings. I hired a pilot here to carry us to Batavia. Our latitude obſerved in Sourabya road was 7° 11′ S. Longitude made from Cape Sandana 1° 52″ W.

Thurſday 17. On the 17th, we ſailed from Sourabya, in company with three prows. At noon, we anchored at Criſſey, which is a town with a ſmall fort, belonging to the Dutch. We remained here about two hours, and then weighed. Latitude of Criſſey 7° 9′ S. Longitude from Cape Sandana, 1° 55′ W.

The navigation through the Straits of Madura is ſo intricate, that, with the little opportunity I had, I am unable to undertake a deſcription of it. The next day, (September

Friday 18. 18th) having paſſed the ſtraits, we bore away to the weſtward, along the coaſt of Java, in company with the prows before

before mentioned. We had regular ſoundings all the way to Samarang, off which place we anchored on the 22d in the afternoon; the church bearing S E; diſtance from the ſhore half a league: depth of water two fathoms. The ſhoalneſs of the coaſt here, makes the road of Samarang very inconvenient, both on account of the great diſtance that large ſhips (of which there were ſeveral in the road) are obliged to lay from the ſhore, and of the landing, which is in a river that cannot be entered before half-flood. This river reſembles the one at Paſſourwang, the ſhores being low, with offenſive dead animals laying about. I was met at the landing-place by the equipage-maſter, and he furniſhed me with a carriage to carry me to the governor, whoſe reſidence is about two miles from the town of Samarang. I requeſted, and obtained leave to have our wants ſupplied, which were, to recruit our proviſions, and to get a new main-maſt, having ſprung ours in the paſſage from Sourabya.

1789. SEPTEMBER. Tueſday 22.

Samarang is a fortified town, ſurrounded by a wall and ditch; and is the moſt conſiderable ſettlement, next to Batavia, that the Dutch have in Java. Here is a very good hoſpital, and a public ſchool, chiefly for teaching the mathematics. They have likewiſe a theatre. Proviſions are remarkably cheap here, beef being at ten doits per pound, and the price of a fowl 12 doits.

I experienced great civility from ſome of the gentlemen at Samarang, particularly from M. Le Baron de Boſe, a merchant, brother to the M. de Boſe, commandant of the troops at Sourabya: and from M. Abegg, the ſurgeon of the hoſpital, to whom we were indebted for advice and medicines, for which he would not conſent to receive payment.

1789. SEPTEMBER. The latitude of Samarang is 6° 57′ S. Longitude, by my reckoning, from Cape Sandana, 4° 7′ W.

Saturday 26. On the 26th, we ſailed from Samarang; and with us, a galley mounting ſix ſwivels, which the governor had directed to accompany us to Batavia.

OCTOBER. Thurſday 1. On the 1ſt of October we anchored in Batavia road, where we found riding, a Dutch ſhip of war, and 20 ſail of Dutch Eaſt India ſhips, beſides many ſmaller veſſels.

CHAP. XX.

Occurrences at Batavia, and Paſſage thence to England.

IN the afternoon, at four o'clock, I went on ſhore, and landed at a houſe by the river, where ſtrangers firſt ſtop and give an account who they are, whence they came, &c. From this place, a Malay gentleman took me in a carriage to the Sabandar, Mr. Englehard, whoſe houſe was in the environs of the city, on the ſide neareſt the ſhipping. The Sabandar is the officer with whom all ſtrangers are obliged to tranſact their buſineſs: at leaſt, the whole muſt go through his hands. With him, I went to pay my reſpects to the governor-general, who received me with great civility. I acquainted his excellency with my ſituation, and requeſted my people might be taken care of, and that we ſhould be allowed to take a paſſage to Europe in the firſt ſhip that ſailed. I likewiſe deſired permiſſion to ſell the ſchooner and launch. All this his excellency told me ſhould be granted. I then took leave, and returned with the Sabandar, who wrote down the particulars of my wants, in order to form from them a regular petition, to be preſented to the council the next day. I had brought from the governor of Coupang, directed for the governor-general at Batavia, the account of my voyage and misfortune, tranſlated into Dutch, from an account that I had given

1789. OCTOBER.

to

1789. OCTOBER. to Mr. Van Eſte. So attentive had they been at Timor to every thing that related to us.

There is a large hotel at Batavia, fitted up purpoſely for the accommodation of ſtrangers, who are not allowed to reſide at any other place. It is ſituated near the great river, in a part of the city that is reckoned the moſt airy and healthy. Nevertheleſs, I found the air hot and ſuffocating, and was taken ill in the night with a violent pain

Friday 2. in my head. The next morning, at nine, the council ſat, and I attended, accompanied by the Sabandar; and was informed that the council had complied with all I had requeſted.

When I returned to the hotel, my head-ach increaſed, and a violent fever came on. I ſent to acquaint the Sabandar of my ſituation, and was ſoon after attended by the head ſurgeon of the town hoſpital, Mr. Aanſorp; by whoſe care and ſkill, in leſs than 24 hours, the fever conſiderably abated, but a ſevere head-ach continued. I had an invitation from the governor-general to dine with him; which, of courſe, I was obliged to decline.

I hired a carriage, which coſt three dollars per day, for the benefit of taking an airing. My lodgings at the hotel were ſo cloſe and hot, that I deſired the Sabandar to apply to the Governor General, for leave to hire a houſe in the country; which requeſt his excellency not only immediately complied with, but gave directions for my being accommodated at the houſe of the phyſician or ſurgeon-general, Mr. Sparling.

One of my people, Thomas Hall, being ill with a flux, I obtained leave for him to be ſent to the country hoſpital, which is a convenient airy building.

Tueſday 6 Tueſday the 6th. This morning, at ſun-riſe, I left the hotel, and was carried to Mr. Sparling's houſe, about four

miles distant from the city, and near the convalescent hospital, which at this time had also sick men in it, the whole number of patients amounting to 800. I found every thing prepared for my comfort and convenience. Mr. Sparling would suffer me to take no medicine, though I had still considerable fever with head-ach: but I found so much relief from the difference of the air, that in the evening I was able to accompany Mr. Sparling on a visit to the governor-general, at one of his country seats; where we found many ladies, all dressed in the Malay fashion, some of them richly ornamented with jewels. I had invitations from several gentlemen, and some very kindly pressed me to make their country houses my abode, till my health should be re-established. 1789. OCTOBER.

My indisposition increasing, Mr. Sparling advised me to quit Batavia as speedily as possible, and represented the necessity of it to the governor-general. I was informed from his excellency, that the homeward-bound ships were so much crowded, that there would be no possibility of all my people going in one ship, and that they could be accommodated no other way than by dividing them into different ships. Seeing, therefore, that a separation was unavoidable, I determined to follow the advice of the physician, and, as a packet was appointed to sail for Europe on the 16th instant, I sent to request of the governor that I might be allowed to take a passage in her for myself, and as many of my people as they were able to receive. In answer to this, I was acquainted that myself and two more could be accommodated in the packet, she being too small to admit a greater number; but that I might rest assured of passages being provided for those that remained, by the earliest opportunities. Thursday 8.

Friday

1789. OCTOBER. Friday 9. Friday the 9th. This day, anchored in the road, the General Elliot, an Engliſh ſhip, commanded by Captain Lloyd. In the Straits of Banca, he had met with ſome boats belonging to the Eaſt India Company's ſhip Vanſittart, that was loſt in the Straits of Billaton, by having ſtruck on a rock that went through her bottom. Captain Wilſon, who commanded the Vanſittart, I was informed, had juſt finiſhed a ſurvey of thoſe Straits, and was hoiſting his boat in, when the ſhip ſtruck. Immediately on receiving the intelligence, Captain Lloyd, in the General Elliot, and another ſhip in company, called the Nonſuch, ſailed for the wreck. They found the ſhip had been burnt down to the water's edge by the Malays. They however ſaved 40 cheſts of treaſure out of 55, which were ſaid to have been on board. Moſt of the ſhip's company were ſaved: one man only was loſt in the ſhip, and five others in a ſmall boat were miſſing, who were ſuppoſed to have taken ſome of the treaſure.—The greater part of the people went with Captain Wilſon to China, and ſome were with Captain Lloyd.

Saturday 10. Saturday the 10th. This morning, the Reſource was ſold by public auction: the cuſtom at Batavia, is to begin high, and to lower the price, till ſome perſon bids; and the firſt bidder is the buyer. She was accordingly put up at 2000 rix-dollars, but, to my great diſappointment, no one offered to purchaſe before the auctioneer had lowered the demand to 295 rix-dollars, for which price ſhe was ſold; the purchaſer being an Engliſhman, Captain John Eddie, who commanded an Engliſh ſhip from Bengal. If no ſtrangers had been preſent at the ſale, I imagine they would have let her run down to 200 dollars, in which caſe I ſhould have had no alternative.

The

The launch likewiſe was ſold. The ſervices ſhe had rendered us, made me feel great reluctance at parting with her; which I would not have done, if I could have found a convenient opportunity of getting her conveyed to Europe. 1789. OCTOBER.

Little as the ſchooner had ſold for, I found I was in danger of having the ſum leſſened; for the Sabandar informed me, that, by an order of the council, there was a duty on the ſale of all veſſels. With this demand I would by no means comply; for I thought I had ſufficiently ſuffered, in ſuſtaining a loſs of 705 rix-dollars out of 1000, by the purchaſe and ſale of the veſſel, ſhe having coſt 1000 rix-dollars.

This day, Thomas Hall, whom I had ſent to be taken care of at the hoſpital, died. He had been ill of a flux from the time of our arrival at Timor.

I agreed with the captain of the packet for a paſſage to Europe, for myſelf, my clerk, and a ſervant. The Sabandar informed me, it was neceſſary that my officers and people ſhould be examined before a notary, reſpecting the loſs of the Bounty, as otherwiſe the governor and council were not legally authorized to detain her, if ſhe ſhould be found in any of the Dutch ſettlements. They were therefore, at my deſire, examined; and afterwards made affidavit before the governor and council at the Stadthouſe. Monday 12.

My officers complaining to me of the unreaſonableneſs of ſome tradeſmen's bills, I ſpoke to the Sabandar. A bill of 51 dollars for five hats, he reduced to 30 dollars, and in other articles made proportionable deductions.

Paper money is the currency of Batavia, and is ſo underſtood in all bargains. At this time, paper was at 28 per cent diſcount: there is likewiſe a difference in the value of the ducatoon, which at Batavia is 80 ſtivers, and in Holland only 63 ſtivers: this occaſions a loſs of 21¼ per cent. on

1789. OCTOBER. remittance of money. It therefore follows, that if any perſon at Batavia remits money by bills of exchange to Europe, they loſe by the diſcount and the exchange 49½ per cent.

Thoſe who have accounts to pay, and can give unexceptionable bills on Europe, will find a conſiderable ſaving by negociating their bills with private people; who are glad to give for them a premium of 20 per cent. at the leaſt. This diſcovery, I made ſomewhat too late to profit by.

One of the greateſt difficulties that ſtrangers have to encounter, is, their being obliged to live at the hotel. This hotel was formerly two houſes, which by doors of communication have been made one. It is in the middle of a range of buildings, more calculated for a cold country than for ſuch a climate as Batavia. There is no free circulation of air, and what is equally bad, it is always very dirty; and there is great want of attendance. What they call cleaning the houſe, is another nuiſance; for they never uſe any water to cool it or to lay the duſt, but ſweep daily with brooms, in ſuch a manner, that thoſe in the houſe are almoſt ſuffocated by a cloud of duſt.

The months of December and January are reckoned the moſt unhealthy of the year, the heavy rains being then ſet in.——The account of the ſeaſons, as given to me here, I believe may be relied on.

The middle of November, the weſt monſoon begins, and rain.

December and January. Continual rain with ſtrong weſterly wind.

February. Weſterly wind. Towards the end of this month the rain begins to abate.

March. Intervals of fine weather. Wind weſterly.

April. In this month the eaſt monſoon begins. Weather generally fine with ſhowers of rain.

May.

May. Eaſt monſoon fixed. Showery. 1789. OCTOBER.
June and July. Clear weather. Strong eaſt wind.
Auguſt and September. Wind more moderate.
October. In this month, the wind begins to be variable, with ſhowers of rain.

The current is ſaid always to run with the wind. Nevertheleſs, I found the reverſe in ſailing from Timor to Java. Between the end of October and the beginning of the enſuing year, no Dutch ſhip bound for Europe is allowed to ſail from Batavia, for fear of being near the Mauritius, at the time of the hurricanes, which are frequent there in December and January.

My illneſs prevented me from gaining much knowledge of Batavia. Of their public buildings, I ſaw nothing that gave me ſo much ſatisfaction as their country hoſpital for ſeamen. It is a large commodious and airy building, about four miles from the town, cloſe to the ſide of the river, or rather in the river: for the ground on which it ſtands has, by labour, been made an iſland of, and the ſick are carried there in a boat: each ward is a ſeparate dwelling, and the different diſeaſes are properly claſſed. They have ſometimes 1400 patients in it: at this time there were 800, but more than half of theſe were recovered, and fit for ſervice, of whom 300 were deſtined for the fleet that was to ſail for Europe. I went through moſt of the wards, and there appeared great care and attention. The ſheets, bedding, and linen, of the ſick were perfectly neat and clean. The houſe of the phyſician, Mr. Sparling, who has the management of the hoſpital, is at one extremity of the building: and here it was that I reſided. To the attention and care of this gentleman, for which he would receive no payment, I am probably indebted for my life.

1789. OCTOBER.

The hoſpital in the town is well attended; but the ſituation is ſo ill choſen, that it certainly would be the ſaving of many lives, to build one in its ſtead up the river; which might be done with great advantage, as water carriage is ſo eaſy and convenient. A great neglect in ſome of the commanders of the ſhipping here, was, ſuffering their people to go dirty, and frequently without frock, ſhirt, or any thing to cover their bodies; which, beſides being a public nuiſance, muſt probably be productive of ill health in the moſt robuſt conſtitution.

The governor-general gave me leave to lodge all my people at the country hoſpital, which I thought a great advantage, and with which they were perfectly ſatisfied. The officers, however, at their own requeſt, remained in the town.

The time fixed for the ſailing of the packet, approaching, I ſettled my accounts with the Sabandar, leaving open the victualling account, to be cloſed by Mr. Fryer, the maſter, previous to his departure; who I likewiſe authorized to ſupply the men and officers left under his command, with one month's pay, to enable them to purchaſe clothing for their paſſage to England.

I had been at great pains to bring living plants from Timor, in ſix tubs; which contained jacks, nancas, karambolas, namnams, jambos, and three thriving bread-fruit plants. Theſe I thought might be ſerviceable at the Cape of Good Hope, if brought no farther: but I had the mortification of being obliged to leave them all at Batavia. I took theſe plants on board at Coupang, on the 20th of Auguſt: they had experienced a paſſage of 42 days to my arrival here. The bread-fruit plants died to the root, and ſprouted afreſh from thence. The karambolas, jacks, nancas, and namnams, I had raiſed from the ſeed, and they were in fine

order. No judgment can hence be formed of the ſucceſs of tranſporting plants, as in the preſent trial, they had many diſadvantages. 1789. OCTOBER.

This morning, before ſun-riſe, I embarked on board the Vlydte packet, commanded by Captain Peter Couvret, bound for Middleburgh. With me likewiſe embarked Mr. John Samwell, clerk, and John Smith, ſeaman. Thoſe of our company who ſtaid behind, the governor promiſed me ſhould follow in the firſt ſhips, and be as little divided as poſſible.——At 7 o'clock, the packet weighed, and ſailed out of the road. Friday 16.

On the 18th, we ſpoke the Rambler, an American brig, belonging to Boſton, bound to Batavia. After paſſing the Straits of Sunda, we ſteered to the north of the Cocos Iſles. Theſe iſlands, Captain Couvret informed me, are full of cocoa-nut trees: there is no anchorage near them, but good landing for boats. Their latitude 12° 0′ S. Longitude 96° 5′ E. Sunday 18.

In the paſſage to the Cape of Good Hope, there occurred nothing worth remark. I cannot however forbear noticing the Dutch manner of navigating. They ſteer by true compaſs, or rather endeavour ſo to do, by means of a ſmall moveable central card, which they ſet to the meridian: and whenever they diſcover the variation has altered 2½ degrees, ſince the laſt adjuſtment, they again correct the central card. This is ſteering within a quarter of a point, without aiming at greater exactneſs. The officer of the watch likewiſe corrects the courſe for lee-way, by his own judgment, before it is marked down in the log board. They heave no log: I was told that the company do not allow it. Their manner of computing their run, is by means of a meaſured diſtance of 40 feet, along the ſhip's ſide: they take notice of any remarkable patch of froth, when

1789. OCTOBER. when it is abreaſt the foremoſt end of the meaſured diſtance, and count half ſeconds till the mark of froth is abreaſt the after end. With the number of half ſeconds thus obtained, they divide the number 48, taking the product for the rate of ſailing in geographical miles in one hour, or the number of Dutch miles in four hours.

It is not uſual to make any allowance to the ſun's declination, on account of being on a different meridian from that for which the tables are calculated: they in general, compute with the numbers juſt as they are found in the table. From all this, it is not difficult to conceive the reaſon why the Dutch are frequently above ten degrees out in their reckoning. Their paſſages likewiſe are conſiderably lengthened, by not carrying a ſufficient quantity of ſail.

December 16. December 17. December the 16th, in the afternoon, we anchored in Table Bay. The next morning, I went on ſhore, and waited on his excellency M. Vander Graaf, who received me in the moſt polite and friendly manner. The Guardian, commanded by Lieutenant Riou, had left the Cape about eight days before, with cattle and ſtores for Port Jackſon. This day, anchored in Table Bay, the Aſtrée, a French frigate, commanded by the Count de St. Rivel, from the Iſle of France, on board of which ſhip was the late governor, the Chevalier d'Entrecaſtreaux. Other ſhips that arrived during my ſtay at the Cape, were, a French 40 gun frigate, an Eaſt India ſhip, and a brig, of the ſame nation: likewiſe two other French ſhips, with ſlaves, from the coaſt of Moſambique, bound to the Weſt Indies: a Dutch packet from Europe, after a four months paſſage: and the Harpy, a South Sea Whaler, with 500 barrels of ſpermaceti, and 400 of ſeal, and other oils. There is a ſtanding order from the Dutch Eaſt India Company, that no perſon who takes a paſſage from Batavia for Europe, in any of their ſhips,

ſhips, muſt be allowed to leave the ſhip before ſhe arrives at her intended port. According to which regulation, I muſt have gone to Holland in the packet. Of this, I was not informed till I was taking leave of the governor-general, at Batavia, when it was too late for him to give the Captain an order to permit me to land in the channel. He however deſired I would make uſe of his name to governor Vander Graaf, who readily complied with my requeſt, and gave the neceſſary orders to the Captain of the packet, a copy of which his excellency gave to me; and at the ſame time, recommendatory letters to people of conſequence in Holland, in caſe I ſhould be obliged to proceed ſo far. 1789. DECEMBER.

I left a letter at the Cape of Good Hope, to be forwarded to governor Phillips, at Port Jackſon, by the firſt opportunity; containing a ſhort account of my voyage, with a deſcriptive liſt of the pirates: and from Batavia I had written to Lord Cornwallis; ſo that every part of India will be prepared to receive them.

We ſailed from the Cape, in company with the Aſtrée French frigate. The next morning, neither ſhip nor land were in ſight. On the 15th, we paſſed in ſight of the iſland St. Helena. The 21ſt, we ſaw the iſland Aſcenſion. On the 10th of February, the wind being at N E, blowing freſh, our ſails were covered with a fine orange-coloured duſt. Fuego, the weſternmoſt of the Cape de Verd iſlands, and the neareſt land to us, on that day at noon bore N E by E ½ E, diſtance 140 leagues. When we had paſſed the latitude of the Weſtern iſlands, a look-out was kept for ſome rocks, which Captain Couvret had been informed lay in latitude 44° 25′ N, and 2° 50′ eaſt longitude from the eaſt end of St. Michael. This information, Captain Couvret had received from a perſon that he knew, and who Saturday 2.

1730. MARCH. March 14.

ſaid he had ſeen them. On the 13th of March, we ſaw the Bill of Portland, and on the evening of the next day, Sunday March the 14th, I left the packet, and was landed at Portſmouth, by an Iſle of Wight boat.

Thoſe of my officers and people whom I left at Batavia, were provided with paſſages in the earlieſt ſhips; and at the time we parted, were apparently in good health. Nevertheleſs, they did not all live to quit Batavia. Mr. Elphinſtone, maſter's mate, and Peter Linkletter, ſeaman, died within a fortnight after my departure; the hardſhips they had experienced having rendered them unequal to cope with ſo unhealthy a climate as that of Batavia. The remainder embarked on board the Dutch fleet for Europe, and arrived ſafe at this country, except Robert Lamb, who died on the paſſage, and Mr. Ledward, the ſurgeon, who has not yet been heard of. Thus, of nineteen who were forced by the mutineers into the launch, it has pleaſed God that twelve ſhould ſurmount the difficulties and dangers of the voyage, and live to re-viſit their native country.

THE END.

00085579

Digitized with financial assistance from
Observer Research Foundation
on 01 June, 2019